This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

PARADISE LOST.

'ars,
d,

ıblime.
SON.

PARADISE LOST,

A

POEM

IN

TWELVE BOOKS.

THE AUTHOR

JOHN MILTON.

ACCORDING TO THE AUTHOR'S LAST EDITION, IN THE YEAR 1674.

DUBLIN:

Printed for W. and W. Smith, P. Wilson, and T. Ewing.

M DCC LXVII.

BODL. LIBR.
25. NOV. 1916
OXFORD

THE VERSE.

THE meaſure is Engliſh heroic verſe without rime, as that of Homer in Greek, and Virgil in Latin; rime being no neceſſary adjunct or true ornament of poem or good verſe, in longer works eſpecially, but the invention of a barbarous age, to ſet off wretched matter and lame meter; grac'd indeed ſince by the uſe of ſome famous modern poets, carried away by cuſtom, but much to their own vexation, hindrance, and conſtraint to expreſs many things otherwiſe, and for the moſt part worſe than elſe they would have expreſt them. Not without cauſe therefore ſome both Italian and Spaniſh poets of prime note have rejected rime both in longer and ſhorter works, as have alſo long ſince our beſt Engliſh tragedies, as a thing of itſelf, to all judicious ears, trivial and of no true muſical delight; which conſiſts only in apt numbers, fit quantity of ſyllables, and the ſenſe variouſly drawn out from one verſe into

another, not in the jingling ſound
endings, a fault avoided by the lear
cients both in poetry and all good o
This neglect then of rime ſo little i
taken for a defect, though it may f
perhaps to vulgar readers, that it ra
to be eſteem'd an example ſet, the
Engliſh, of antient liberty, recov
heroic poem from the troubleſom
modern bondage of riming.

THE ARGUMENTS.

THE ARGUMENT OF THE FIRST BOOK.

THE first book propoſes firſt in brief the whole ubject, man's diſobedience, and the loſs there- Paradiſe wherein he was plac't: then touches e cauſe of his fall, the ſerpent, or rather Satan pent, who revolting from God, and drawing e many legions of angels, was by the com- God driv'n out of heaven with all his crew in- eat deep. Which action paſt over, the poem o the midſt of things, preſenting Satan with s now fall'n into hell, deſcribed here, not in r (for heav'n and earth may be ſuppos'd as yet , certainly not yet accurſt) but in a place of knefs, fitlieſt call'd Chaos: here Satan with s lying on the burning lake, thunderſtruck and , after a certain ſpace recovers, as from con- alls up him who next in order and dignity lay they confer of their miſerable fall. Satan all his legions, who lay till then in the ſame confounded; they riſe, their numbers, array , their chief leaders nam'd, according to the wn afterwards in Canaan and the countries ad- to theſe Satan directs his ſpeech, comforts th hopes yet of regaining heav'n, but tells them a new world, *and new kind* of creature to be *according to an ancient* propheſie, or report in

in rifes, [illegible],
peers there ſit in council.

HE ARGUMENT OF THE SECON

[E conſultation begun, Satan debat
nother battle be to be hazarded for t
em: ſome adviſe it, others diſſuade
l is preferr'd, mentioned before by Sa
truth of that prophecie or tradition i
ning another world, and another kin
al or not much inferior to themſelv
e to be created: their doubt who ſh
s difficult ſearch: Satan their chief u
s voyage, is honoured and applauded
us ended, the reſt betake them ſeve
eral employments, as their inclinatio
tertain the time till Satan returns.
[illegible] gates, finds them ſh

THE ARGUMENTS.

THE ARGUMENT OF THE THIRD BOOK.

OD ſitting on his throne ſees Satan flying to-
wards this world, then newly created; ſhews
o the ſon who ſat at his right hand; foretells the
s of Satan in perverting mankind; clears his own
e and wiſdom from all imputation, having created
ree and able enough to have withſtood his temp-
yet declares his purpoſe of grace towards him, in
l he felt not of his own malice, as did Satan, but
n ſeduc't. The ſon of God renders praiſes to his
for the manifeſtation of his gracious purpoſe to-
i man; but God again declares, that grace cannot
tended towards man without the ſatisfaction of di-
uſtice; man hath offended the majeſty of God by
ıg to god-head, and therefore with all his progeny
ed to death muſt dye, unleſs ſome one can be
ſufficient to anſwer for his offence, and undergo
miſhment. The ſon of God freely offers himſelf
om for man: the father accepts him, ordains his
ıation, pronounces his exaltation above all names
ıven and earth; commands all the angels to adore
they obey, and hymning to their harps in full quire,
ate the father and the ſon. Mean while Satan a-
upon the bare convex of this world's outermoſt
where wandring he firſt finds a place ſince called
mbo of vanity; what perſons and things fly up
:r; thence comes to the gate of heaven, deſcrib'd
ding by ſtairs, and the waters above the firmament
low about it: his *paſſage thence* to the orb of the
he finds there Uriel the regent of that orb, but

firſt changes himſelf into the ſhape of a meaner angel and pretending a zealous deſire to behold the new cr ation and man whom God had plac't here, inquires him the place of his habitation, and is directed; aligh firſt on mount Niphates.

THE ARGUMENT OF THE FOURTH BOOK.

SATAN now in proſpect of Eden, and nigh the pla where he muſt now attempt the bold enterpri which he undertook alone againſt God and man, fal into many doubts with himſelf, and many paſſions, fea envy, and deſpair; but at length confirms himſelf in ev journeys on to Paradiſe, whoſe outward proſpect and tuation is deſcribed, overleaps the bounds, ſits in t ſhape of a cormorant on the tree of life, as higheſt

ing worſhip. Gabriel drawing forth his bands of night-watch to walk the round of Paradiſe, appoints two ſtrong angels to Adam's bower, leaſt the evil ſpirit ſhould be there doing ſome harm to Adam or Eve ſleeping; there they find him at the ear of Eve, tempting her in a dream, and bring him, though unwilling, to Gabriel; by whom queſtioned, he ſcornfully anſwers, prepares reſiſtance, but hindered by a ſign from heaven, flies out of Paradiſe.

THE ARGUMENT OF THE FIFTH BOOK.

MORNING approach't, Eve relates to Adam her troubleſome dream; he likes it not, yet comforts her; they come forth to their day labours: their morning hymn at the Door of their bower. God to render man inexcuſable ſends Raphael to admoniſh him of his obedience, of his free eſtate, of his enemy near at hand; who he is, and why his enemy, and whatever elſe may avail Adam to know. Raphael comes down to Paradiſe, his appearance deſcrib'd, his coming diſcern'd by Adam afar off ſitting at the door of his bower; he goes out to meet him, brings him to his lodge, entertains him with the choiceſt fruits of Paradiſe got together by Eve; their diſcourſe at table: Raphael performs his meſſage, minds Adam of his ſtate and of his enemy; relates at Adam's requeſt who that enemy is, and how he came to be ſo, beginning from his firſt revolt in heaven, and the occaſion thereof; how he drew his legions after him to the parts of the north, and *there incited* them to rebel with him, p

ſwading all but only Abdiel a ſeraph, who in argume
diſſwades and oppoſes him, then forſakes him.

THE ARGUMENT OF THE SIXTH BOOK.

RAPHAEL continues to relate how Michael a
Gabriel were ſent forth to battel againſt Sat
and his angels. The firſt fight deſcrib'd : Satan a
his powers retire under night : he calls a council, inven
deviliſh engines, which in the ſecond day's fight p
Michael and his angels to ſome diſorder ; but they
length pulling up mountains overwhelm'd both the for
and machines of Satan : yet the tumult not ſo endin
God on the third day ſends Meſſiah his ſon, for who
he had reſerv'd the glory of that victory : he in the pow
er of his father coming to the place, and cauſing all t
legions to ſtand ſtill on either ſide, with his chari
and thunder driving into the midſt of his enemies, pu

s performance thereof, and his reaſcention into hea-n.

THE ARGUMENT OF THE EIGHT BOOK.

ADAM inquires concerning celeſtial motions, is doubtfully anſwer'd, and exhorted to ſearch ra-r things more worthy of knowledge: Adam aſſents, l ſtill deſirous to detain Raphael, relates to him what remember'd ſince his own creation, his placing in adiſe, his talk with God concerning ſolitude and fit iety, his firſt meeting and nuptials with Eve, his ourſe with the angel thereupon; who after admo-ons repeated departs.

THE ARGUMENT OF THE NINTH BOOK.

ATAN having compaſt the earth, with meditated guile returns as a miſt by night into Paradiſe, en-into the ſerpent ſleeping. Adam and Eve in the rning go forth to their labours, which Eve propoſes ſivide in ſeveral places, each labouring apart: Adam ſents not, alledging the danger, leſt that enemy, of om they were forewarn'd, ſhould attempt her found ne: Eve loath to be thought not circumſpect or firm ugh, urges her going apart, the rather deſirous to ke trial of her ſtrength; Adam at laſt yields: the pent finds her alone; his ſubtle approach, firſt ga-g, then ſpeaking, with much flattery extolling Eve ve all other creatures. Eve wondring to hear the pent ſpeak, aſks how he attain'd to human ſpeech d ſuch underſtanding *not till now*; the ſerpent an-ers, *that by tafting of a certain* tree in the garde

he attain'd both to ſpeech and reaſon, till then vo
both: Eve requires him to bring her to that tree,
finds it to be the tree of knowledge forbidden
ſerpent now grown bolder, with many wiles and
ments induces her at length to eat; ſhe pleas'd
the taſte deliberates a while whether to impart th
to Adam or not, at laſt brings him of the fruit, r
what perſwaded her to eat thereof: Adam at fi
maz'd, but perceiving her loſt, reſolves through
mence of love to periſh with her; and extenuatin
treſpaſs, eats alſo of the fruit: the effects there
them both; they ſeek to cover their nakedneſs;
fall to variance and accuſation of one another.

THE ARGUMENT OF THE TENTH BOOK

MAN's tranſgreſſion known, the guardian a
forſake Paradiſe, and return up to heav

ratulation. Satan arrives at Pandaemonium, in ſembly relates with boaſting his ſucceſs againſt inſtead of applauſe is entertain'd with a general all his audience, transform'd with himſelf alſo ly into ſerpents, according to his doom given in ſe; then deluded with a ſhew of the forbidden pringing up before them, they greedily reaching e of the fruit, chew duſt and bitter aſhes. The dings of Sin and Death; God foretells the final r of his Son over them, and the renewing of all ; but for the preſent commands his angels to ſeveral alterations in the heavens and elements. more and more perceiving his fallen condition bewailes, rejects the condolement of Eve; ſhe s and at length appeaſes him: then to evade the ikely to fall on their ofspring, propoſes to Adam : ways which he approves not, but conceiving hope, puts her in mind of the late promiſe made that her ſeed ſhould be reveng'd on the ſerpent, horts her with him to ſeek peace of the offend-ty, by repentance and ſupplication.

THE ARGUMENT OF THE ELEVENTH BOOK.

HE Son of God preſents to his Father the prayers of our firſt parents now repenting, and intercedes em: God accepts them, but declares that they o longer abide in Paradiſe; ſends Michael with d of cherubim to diſpoſſeſs them; but firſt to re-o Adam future things: Michael's coming down. ſhews to Eve certain ominous ſigns; he diſcerns el's approach, *goes out to meet* him: the angel *ves their departure*, *Eve's* lamentation. Adam

I relate what ſhall ſucceed; then, in
of Abraham, comes by degrees to explai
ſeed of the woman ſhould be, which w
Adam and Eve in the fall; his incarn
reſurrection, and aſcenſion; the ſtate of t
his ſecond coming. Adam greatly ſatisfie
forted by theſe relations and promiſes deſc
with Michael; wakens Eve, who all th
ſlept, but with gentle dreams compos'd t
mind and ſubmiſſion. Michael in eithe
them out of Paradiſe; the fiery ſword v
them, and the cherubim taking their ſtat
the place.

A DISE LOST.

BOOK I.

firſt diſobedience, and the fruit
forbidden tree, whoſe mortal taſte
into the world, and all our woe,
len, till one greater man
l regain the bliſful ſeat,
ruſe, that on the ſecret top
Sinai, didſt inſpire
who firſt taught the choſen ſeed,
g how the heav'ns and earth
aos: or if Sion hill
re, and Siloa's brook that flow'd
:le of God; I thence
to my advent'rous ſong,
iiddle flight intends to ſoar
in mount, while it purſues
ipted yet in proſe or rhime.
u, O Spirit, that doſt prefer
les th'upright heart and pure,
thou know'ſt; thou from the firſt
nd with mighty wings outſpread,
brooding on the vaſt abyſs,
regnant: what in me is dark
is low raiſe and ſupport;
hth of this great argument
nal providence,
ways of God to men.
ew'n hides nothing from thy view,

a ſerpent; ne it was whoſe guile
with envy and revenge, deceiv'd
er of mankind, what time his pride
im out from heav'n, with all his hoſt
ngels, by whoſe aid aſpiring
ıſelf in glory above his peers,
to have equall'd the Moſt High,
ɔs'd; and with ambitious aim
e throne and monarchy of God
ɔious war in heav'n and battle proud
attempt. Him the almighty power
ıdlong flaming from th'ethereal ſky-
ous ruin and combuſtion down
ıleſs perdition, there to dwell
ıtine chains and penal fire,
t defy th'Omnipotent to arms.
s the ſpace that meaſures day and night
l men, he with his horrid crew

once as far as angels ken he views
ıe diſmal ſituation waſte and wild,
dungeon horrible, on all ſides round
one great furnace flam'd. yet from thoſe flames
light, but rather darkneſs viſible
v'd only to diſcover ſights of woe,
gions of ſorrow, doleful ſhades, where peace
ıd reſt can never dwell, hope never comes
ıat comes to all; but torture without end
ll urges, and a fiery deluge, fed
ith ever-burning ſulphur unconſum'd:
ch place eternal juſtice had prepar'd
r thoſe rebellious, here their priſon ordain'd
utter darkneſs, and their portion ſet
far remov'd from God and light of heav'n
from the center thrice to the utmoſt pole.
how unlike the place from whence they fell!
ıere the companions of his fall, o'erwhelm'd
ith floods and whirlwinds of tempeſtuous fire,
ſoon diſcerns, and welt'ring by his ſide
ıe next himſelf in power, and next in crime,
ng after known in Paleſtine, and nam'd
elzebub. To whom th'arch enemy,
ıd thence in heav'n call'd Satan, with bold words
eaking the horrid ſilence thus began.
If thou beeſt he; but O how fall'n! how chang'd
ɔm him, who in the happy realms of light
ɔth'd with tranſcendent brightneſs didſt outſhine
rriads though bright: if he whom mutual league,
ıited thoughts and counſels, equal hope
ıd hazard in the glorious enterpriſe,

Join'd with me once, now misery hath join'd
In equal ruin: into what pit thou seest
From what highth fall'n, so much the stronger prov
He with his thunder: and till then who knew
The force of those dire arms? yet not for those,
Nor what the potent victor in his rage
Can else inflict, do I repent or change,
Though chang'd in outward lustre; that fix'd min
And high disdain from sense of injur'd merit,
That with the Mightiest rais'd me to contend,
And to the fierce contention brought along
Innumerable force of spirits arm'd,
That durst dislike his reign, and me preferring,
His utmost pow'r with adverse pow'r oppos'd
In dubious battel on the plains of heaven,

: by force or guile eternal war,
ileable to our grand foe,
w triumphs, and in th' exceſs of joy
gning holds the tyranny of heav'n.
e th'apoſtate angel, though in pain,
ng aloud, but rack'd with deep deſpair:
im thus anſwer'd ſoon his bold compeer.
ace, O chief of many throned powers,
led th'imbattell'd ſeraphim to war
r thy conduct, and in dreadful deeds
leſs, endanger'd heav'n's perpetual king;
l put to proof his high ſupremacy,
ether upheld by ſtrength, or chance, or fate.
o well I ſee and rue the dire event,
at with ſad overthrow and foul defeat
th loſt us heav'n, and all this mighty hoſt
horrible deſtruction laid thus low,
far as gods and heav'nly eſſences
n periſh; for the mind and ſpirit remains
incible, and vigour ſoon returns,
ough all our glory extinct, and happy ſtate
re ſwallow'd up in endleſs miſery.
t what if he our conqueror, (whom I now
force believe almighty, ſince no leſs
an ſuch could have o'erpow'r'd ſuch force as ours
ve left us this our ſpirit and ſtrength intire
ongly to ſuffer and ſupport our pains,
at we may ſo ſuffice his vengeful ire,
do him mightier ſervice as his thralls
right of war, whate'er his buſineſs be
e in the *heart of hell to work* in fire,

I. 152

;
'e feel
ıg

iend repl
able
'e,
ıſk,

nce
)d,
ı,
evil ;
rhaps
urb
aim.

Caſts pale and dreadful? thither let us tend
From off the toſſing of theſe fiery waves,
There reſt, if any reſt can harbour there,
And reaſſembling our afflicted powers,
Conſult how we may henceforth moſt offend
Our enemy, our own loſs how repair,
How overcome this dire calamity,
What reinforcement we may gain from hope,
If not what reſolution from deſpair.

Thus Satan talking to his neareſt mate
With head up-lift above the wave, and eyes
That ſparkling blaz'd, his other parts beſides,
Prone on the flood, extended long and large,
Lay floating many a rood, in bulk as huge
As whom the fables name of monſtrous ſize,
Titanian, or earth-born, that warr'd on Jove,
Briareos or Typhon, whom the den
By ancient Tarſus held, or that ſea beaſt
Leviathan, which God of all his works
Created hugeſt that ſwim the ocean ſtream:
Him haply ſlumbering on the Norway foam,
The pilot of ſome ſmall night-founder'd ſkiff,
Deeming ſome iſland, oft, as ſeamen tell,
With fixed anchor in his ſkaly rind,
Moors by his ſide under the lee, while night
Inveſts the ſea, and wiſhed morn delays:
So ſtretcht out huge in length the arch-fiend lay,
Chain'd on the burning lake, nor ever thence
Had ris'n or heav'd his head, but that the will
And high permiſſion of all-ruling heaven
Left him at large to his own dark deſigns,

he fought

g forth
ew'n
elf
ice pour'd
he pool
flames.
ires and n
le.
s flight

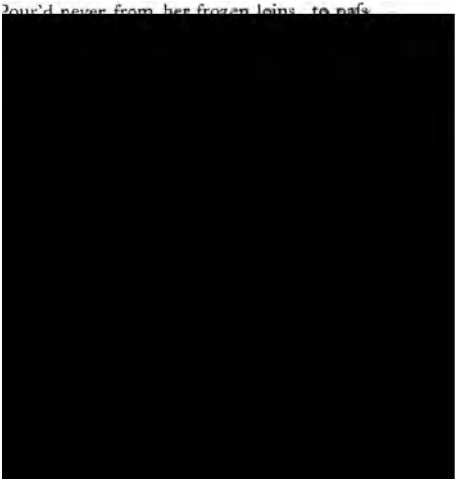
and
n'd
;
force

For that celeſtial light? be it ſo, ſince he
Who now is ſov'rain can diſpoſe and bid
What ſhall be right: fartheſt from him is beſt
Whom reaſon hath equal'd, force hath made ſupream
Above his equals. Farewell happy fields,
Where joy for ever dwells: hail horrors, hail
Infernal world, and thou profoundeſt hell
Receive thy new poſſeſſor: one who brings
A mind not to be chang'd by place or time.
The mind is its own place, and in itſelf
Can make a heav'n of hell, a hell of heav'n.
What matter where, if I be ſtill the ſame,
And what I ſhould be, all but leſs than he
Whom thunder hath made greater? here at leaſt
We ſhall be free; th'almighty hath not built
Here for his envy, will not drive us hence:
Here we may reign ſecure, and in my choice
To reign is worth ambition tho' in hell:
Better to reign in hell, than ſerve in heav'n.
But wherefore let we then our faithful friends,
Th'aſſociates and copartners of our loſs,
Ly thus aſtoniſh't on th'oblivious pool,
And call them not to ſhare with us their part
In this unhappy manſion, or once more
With rallied arms to try what may be yet
Regain'd in heav'n, or what more loſt in hell?
So Satan ſpake, and him Beelzebub
Thus anſwer'd. Leader of thoſe armies bright,
Which but th'Omnipotent none could have foyl'd,
If once they hear that voice, their livelieſt pledge
Of hope in fears and dangers, heard ſo oft

perilous e
ıffaults
n reſume
now the
lake of
amaz'd,
ıus hightl
ıe ſuperio
is pondr
d round
mference
ıon, who
tiſt view
ds,
globe.
pine.
maſt
wand,
ɔs

is and his Memphian chivalry,
e with perfidious hatred they purſu'd
ſojourners of Goſhen, who beheld
i the ſafe ſhore their floting carkaſes
broken chariot wheels; ſo thick beſtrown,
ſt and loſt lay theſe, covering the flood,
r amazement of their hideous change.
all'd ſo loud, that all the hollow deep
ell reſounded. Princes, potentates,
iors, the flower of heav'n, once yours, now loſt,
ch aſtoniſhment as this can ſeize
al ſpirits; or have ye chos'n this place
the toil of battle to repoſe
wearied virtue, for the eaſe you find
umber here, as in the vales of heav'n?
this abject poſture have ye ſworn
dore the conqueror, who now beholds
ub and ſeraph rowling in the flood
ſcatter'd arms and enſigns, till anon
wift purſuers from heav'n gates diſcern
dvantage, and deſcending tread us down
drooping, or with linked thunderbolts
sfix us to the bottom of this gulph.
ce, ariſe, or be for ever fall'n.
ey heard, and were abaſh't, and up they ſprung
the wing, as when men wont to watch
uty, ſleeping found by whom they dread,
and beſtir themſelves ere well awake.
did they not perceive the evil plight
ich they were, or the fierce pains not feel;
o their general's voice they ſoon obey'd

Innumerable. As when the potent rod
Of Amram's ſon in Aegypt's evil day
Wav'd round the coaſt, up call'd a pitchy cloud
Of locuſts, warping on the eaſter wind,
That o'er the realm of impious Pharaoh hung
Like night, and darken'd all the land of Nile:
So numberleſs were thoſe bad angels ſeen
Hovering on wing under the cope of hell
Twixt upper, nether, and ſurrounding fires;
Till, as a ſignal giv'n, th'uplifted ſpear
Of their great Sultan waving to direct
Their courſe, in even balance down they light
On the firm brimſtone, and fill all the plain;
A multitude, like which the populous north
Pour'd never from her frozen loins to paſs



God their creator, and th'invisible
Glory of him that made them, to transform
Oft to the image of a brute, adorn'd
With gay religions full of pomp and gold,
And devils to adore for deities;
Then were they known to men by various names,
And various idols, through the heathen world.
Say, muse, their names then known, who first, who last,
Rouz'd from the slumber, on that fiery couch,
At their great emperor's call, as next in worth,
Came singly where he stood on the bare strand,
While the promiscuous crowd stood yet aloof?
The chief were those who from the pit of hell
Roaming to seek their prey on earth, durst fix
Their seats long after next the seat of God,
Their altars by his altar, gods ador'd
Among the nations round, and durst abide
Jehovah thundring out of Sion, thron'd
Between the cherubim; yea, often plac'd
Within his sanctuary itself their shrines,
Abominations; and with cursed things
His holy rites, and solemn feasts profan'd,
And with their darkness durst affront his light.
First Moloch, horrid king, besmear'd with blood
Of human sacrifice, and parents tears,
Though for the noise of drums and timbrels loud
Their childrens cries unheard, that pass'd through fire
To his grim idol. Him the Ammonite
Worshipt in Rabba and her watry plain,
In Argob and in Basan, to the stream
Of utmost *Arnon*. Nor content with such

[redacted]
oar to Nebo, and the wild
noſt Abarim ; in Heſebon
naim, Seon's realm, beyond
y dale of Sibma clad with vines,
le to th'Aſphaltic pool.
ther name, when he entic'd
ittim on their march from Nile
wanton rites, which coſt them woe.
his luſtful orgies he inlarg'd
t hill of ſcandal, by the grove
homicide, luſt hard by hate ;
ofiah drove them thence to hell.
came they, who from the bordering flood
hrates to the brook that parts
Syrian ground, had general names
nd Aſhtaroth, thoſe male,
ine. For ſpirits when they pleaſe

And works of love or enmity fulfill.
For thoſe the race of Iſrael oft forſook
Their living ſtrength, and unfrequented left
His righteous altar, bowing lowly down
To beſtial gods; for which their heads as low
Bow'd down in battle, ſunk before the ſpear
Of deſpicable foes. With theſe in troop
Came Aſtoreth, whom the Phœnicians call'd
Aſtarte, queen of heav'n, with creſcent horns;
To whoſe bright image nightly by the moon
Sidonian virgins paid their vows and ſongs,
In Sion alſo not unſung, where ſtood
Her temple on th'offenſive mountain, built
By that uxorious king, whoſe heart though large,
Beguil'd by fair idolatreſſes, fell
To idols foul. Thammuz came next behind,
Whoſe annual wound in Lebanon allur'd
The Syrian damſels to lament his fate
In amorous ditties all a ſummers day,
While ſmooth Adonis from his native rock
Ran purple to the ſea, ſuppos'd with blood
Of Thammuz yearly wounded: the love tale
Infected Sion's daughters with like heat,
Whoſe wanton paſſions in the ſacred porch
Ezekiel ſaw, when by the viſion led
His eye ſurvey'd the dark idolatries
Of alienated Judah. Next came one
Who mourn'd in earneſt, when the captive ark
Maim'd his brute image, head and hands lopt off
In his own temple, on the grunſel edge,
Where he fell flat, and ſham'd his worſhippers.

Abbana and Pharphar, lucid ſtreams,
alſo againſt the houſe of God was bold:
:per once he loſt and gain'd a king,
z his ſottiſh conqueror, whom he drew
's altar to diſparage and diſplace
one of Syrian mode, whereon to burn
odious offerings, and adore the gods
)m he had vanquiſht. After theſe appear'd
:ew who under names of old renown,
is, Iſis, Orus, and their train
h monſtrous ſhapes and ſorceries abus'd
ıtic Ægypt and her prieſts, to ſeek
ir wandring gods diſguis'd in brutiſh forms
ıer than human. Nor did Iſrael ſcape
infection, when their borrow'd gold compo
calf in Oreb: and the rebel king
bl'd that ſin in Bethel and in Dan,

[redacted]
ur ſmoak'd; yet who more oft than he
mples and at altars, when the prieſt
s atheiſt, as did Ely's ſons, who fill'd
luſt and violence the houſe of God.
rts and palaces he alſo reigns
n luxurious cities, where the noiſe
x aſcends above their loftieſt towers,
injury and outrage: and when night
ns the ſtreets, then wander forth the ſons
Belial, flown with inſolence and wine.
ſs the ſtreets of Sodom, and that night
ieah, when the hoſpitable door
'd a matron to avoid worſe rape.
were the prime in order and in might;
eſt were long to tell, though far renown'd,
nian gods, of Javan's iſſue held
yet confeſt later than heav'n and earth
boaſted parents; Titan heav'ns firſt-born
is enormous brood, and birth-right ſeiz'd
nger Saturn, he from mightier Jove
n and Rhea's ſon like meaſure found;
e uſurping reign'd: theſe firſt in Creet
la known, thence on the ſnowy top
d Olympus rul'd the middle air
higheſt heav'n; or on the Delphian cliff,
Dodona, and through all the bounds
ric land; or who with Saturn old
er Adria to th'Heſperian fields,
er the Celtic roam'd the utmoſt iſles.
ſe and more came flocking; but with looks
caſt and *damp, yet ſuch* wherein appear'd

. ...ing courage, and diſpell'd their fears.
ı ſtrait commands that at the warlike ſound
·umpets loud and clarions be up-rear'd
ıighty ſtandard ; that proud honour claim'd
:l as his right, a cherub tall :
forthwith from the glittering ſtaff unfurl'd
ıperial enſign, which full high advanc't
like a meteor ſtreaming to the wind
gems and golden luſtre rich imblaz'd,
ick arms and trophies : all the while
us metal blowing martial ſounds :
ich the univerſal hoſt upſent
t that tore hell's concave, and beyond
d the reign of chaos and old night.
ı moment through the gloom were ſeen
ı ıſand banners riſe into the air
ent colours waving : with them roſe
huge of ſpears

With dread of death to flight or foul retreat,
Nor wanting power to mitigate and ſwage
With ſolemn touches, troubl'd thoughts and chaſe
Anguiſh and doubt and fear and ſorrow and pain
From mortal or immortal minds. Thus they
Breathing united force with fixed thought
Mov'd on in ſilence to ſoft pipes that charm'd
Their painful ſteps o'er the burnt ſoil; and now
Advanc't in view, they ſtand, a horrid front
Of dreadful length and dazling arms, in guiſe
Of warriors old with order'd ſpear and ſhield,
Awaiting what command their mighty chief
Had to impoſe: he through the armed files
Darts his experienc't eye, and ſoon traverſe
The whole battalion views, their order due,
Their viſages and ſtature as of gods,
Their number laſt he ſumms. And now his heart
Diſtends with pride, and hardning in his ſtrength
Glories: for never ſince created man,
Met ſuch embodied force, as nam'd with theſe
Could merit more than that ſmall infantry
Warr'd on by cranes: though all the giant brood
Of Phlegra with th'heroic race were join'd
That fought at Thebes and Ilium, on each ſide
Mixt with auxiliar gods; and what reſounds
In fable or romance of Uther's ſon
Begirt with Britiſh and Armoric knights;
And all who ſince, baptiz'd or infidel
Jouſted in Aſpramount or Montalban,
Damaſco, or Marocco, or Trebiſond,
Or *whom Biſerta ſent* from Afric ſhore

... brightneſs, nor appear'd
ſs than arch-angel ruin'd, and the exceſs
glory obſcur'd : as when the ſun new ris'
oks through the horizontal miſty air
orn of his beams, or from behind the mo
dim eclips diſaſtrous twilight ſheds
half the nations, and with fear of change
plexes monarchs. Darken'd ſo, yet ſhone
ove them all th'archangel : but his face
p ſcars of thunder had intrench't, and car
on his faded cheek, but under browes
dauntleſs courage, and conſiderate pride
ting revenge : cruel his eye, but caſt
of remorſe and paſſion to behold
fellows of his crime, the followers rather
other once beheld in bliſs) condemn'd
ver now to have their lot in pain,
ons of ſpirits ...

wing to wing, and half inclose him round
all his peers: attention held them mute.
e he eſſay'd, and thrice in ſpight of ſcorn,
ſuch as angels weep, burſt forth; at laſt
is interwove with ſighs found out their way.
riads of immortal ſpirits, O powers
hleſs, but with th'Almighty, and that ſtrife
not inglorious, though th'event was dire,
is place teſtifies, and this dire change
ul to utter: but what power of mind,
eeing or preſaging, from the depth
nowledge paſt or preſent, could have fear'd,
ſuch united force of gods, how ſuch
ood like theſe, could ever know repulſe?
vho can yet believe, though after loſs,
all theſe puiſſant legions, whoſe exile
emptied heav'n, ſhall fail to re-aſcend
ais'd, and repoſſeſs their native ſeat?
ne be witneſs all the hoſt of heav'n,
inſels different, or danger ſhun'd
ıe, have loſt our hopes. But he who reigns
ırch in heav'n, till then as one ſecure
ı his throne, upheld by old repute,
nt or cuſtom; and his regal ſtate
orth at full, but ſtill his ſtrength conceal'd,
h tempted our attempt, and wrought our fall.
ſforth his might we know, and know our own
not either to provoke, or dread
war, provok't; our better part remains
ork in cloſe deſign, by fraud or guile,
force effected not: that he no leſs

58.

nes

of fo
long

non, the leaſt erected ſpirit that fell
heav'n, for ev'n in heav'n his looks and thoughts
always downward bent, admiring more
ches of heav'ns pavement, trod'n gold,
ught divine or holy elſe enjoy'd
n beatific: by him firſt
ſo, and by his ſuggeſtion taught,
k'd the center, and with impious hands
the bowels of their mother earth
aſures better hid. Soon had his crew
l into the hill a ſpacious wound,
g'd out ribs of gold. Let none admire
ches grow in hell; that ſoyle may beſt
: the precious bane. And here let thoſe
oaſt in mortal things, and wondring tell
el, and the works of Memphian kings,
how their greateſt monuments of fame,
rength and art are eaſily out-done
its reprobate, and in an hour
n an age they with inceſſant toil
ands innumerable ſcarce perform.
n the plain in many cells prepar'd,
nderneath had veins of liquid fire
from the lake, a ſecond multitude
vondrous art † founded the maſſie ore,
ig each kind, and ſcumm'd the bullion droſs:
d as ſoon had form'd within the ground
ous mould, and from the boiling cells
inge conveyance fill'd each hollow nook,
an organ from one blaſt of wind

† 2d Ed. *Found out the maſſie ore.*

To many a row of pipes the ſound-board breaths.
Anon out of the earth a fabrick huge
Roſe like an exhalation, with the ſound
Of dulcet ſymphonies and voices ſweet,
Built like a temple, where Pylaſters round
Were ſet, and Doric pillars overlaid
With golden architrave; nor did there want
Cornice or freeze, with boſſy ſculptures grav'n,
The roof was fretted gold. Not Babylon,
Nor great Alcairo ſuch magnificence
Equal'd in all their glories, to inſhrine
Belus or Serapis their gods, or ſeat
Their kings, when Ægypt with Aſſyria ſtrove
In wealth and luxury. Th'aſcending pile
Stood fixt her ſtately highth, and ſtrait the dores

call'd him Mulciber; and how he fell
heav'n, they fabl'd, thrown by angry Jove
o're the chryſtal battlements; from morn
oon he fell, from noon to dewy eve,
mmer's day; and with the ſetting ſun
from the zenith like a falling ſtar,
mnos th'Ægean iſle: thus they relate,
; for he with this rebellious rout
ng before; nor aught avail'd him now
ve built in heav'n high towrs; nor did he ſcape
his engines, but was headlong ſent
his induſtrious crew to build in hell.
while the winged heralds by command
ran power, with awful ceremony
rumpets ſound throughout the hoſt proclaim
mn council forthwith to be held
ndæmonium, the high capital
tan and his peers: their ſummons call'd
every band and ſquared regiment
ace or choice the worthieſt; they anon
hundreds and with thouſands trooping came
ded: all acceſs was th·ong'd, the gates
oorches wide, but chief the ſpacious hall
igh like a cover'd field, where champions bold
ride in arm'd, and at the Soldan's chair
l the beſt of Panim chivalry
ortal combat or career with lance)
c ſwarm'd, both on the ground and in the air,
it with the hiſs of ruſſling wings. As bees
ring-time, *when the ſun* with Taurus rides,
forth their populous youth about the hive

:hold a wonder! they ...
, bigneſs to ſurpaſs earth's giant ſons
ow leſs than ſmalleſt dwarfs, in narrow roo
hrong numberleſs, like that pigmean race
eyond the Indian mount, or fairie elves,
Whoſe midnight revels, by a forreſt ſide
)r fountain ſome belated peaſant ſees,
)r dreams he ſees, while overhead the moon
its arbitreſs, and nearer to the earth
Wheels her pale courſe, they on their mirth a
ntent, with jocund muſic charm his ear;
At once with joy and fear his heart rebound
Thus incorporeal ſpirits to ſmalleſt forms
Reduc'd their ſhapes immenſe, and were at
Though without number ſtill amidſt the ha
Of that infernal court. But far within
And in their own dimenſions like themſelves
... lords and cherubim

PARADISE LOST.

BOOK II.

HIGH on a throne of royal ſtate, which far
Out ſhone the wealth of Ormus and of Ind,
Or where the gorgeous eaſt with richeſt hand
Showrs on her kings Barbaric pearl and gold,
Satan exalted ſat, by merit rais'd
To that bad eminence; and from deſpair
Thus high uplifted beyond hope, aſpires
Beyond thus high, inſatiate to purſue
Vain war with heav'n, and by ſucceſs untaught
His proud imaginations thus diſplaid.
Powers and dominions, deities of heav'n,
For ſince no deep within her gulph can hold
Immortal vigour, though oppreſt and fall'n,
I give not heav'n for loſt. From this deſcent
Celeſtial virtues riſing, will appear
More glorious and more dread than from no fall,
And truſt themſelves to fear no ſecond fate:
Me though juſt right, and the fixt laws of heav'n
Did firſt create your leader, next free choice,
With what beſides, in counſel or in fight,
Hath been atchiev'd of merit, yet this loſs
Thus far at leaſt recover'd, hath much more
Eſtabliſht in a ſafe unenvied throne
Yielded with full conſent. The happier ſtate
In heav'n, which follows dignity, might draw
Envy from *each inferior*; but who here
Will envy whom the higheſt place expoſes

Will covet more. With this advanta
To union, and firm faith, and firm
More than can be in heav'n, we no
To claim our juſt inheritance of old,
Surer to proſper than proſperity
Could have aſſur'd us; and by wha
Whether of open war or cover'd guil
We now debate; who can adviſe, n
He ceas'd, and next him Moloc, ſc
Stood up, the ſtrongeſt and the fierc
That fought in heav'n; now fiercer
His truſt was with th'Eternal to be
Equal in ſtrength, and rather than b
Car'd not to be at all; with that c
Went all his fear: of God, or hell,
He reck'd not, and theſe words there
My ſentence is for open war: of w

The priſon of his tyranny who reigns
By our delay? no, let us rather chuſe
Arm'd with hell-flames and fury all at once
O're heav'ns high towrs to force reſiſtleſs way,
Turning our tortures into horrid arms
Againſt the torturer; when to meet the noiſe
Of his almighty engine he ſhall hear
Infernal thunder, and for lightning ſee
Black fire and horror ſhot with equal rage
Among his angels; and his throne itſelf
Mixt with Tartarean ſulphur, and ſtrange fire,
His own invented torments. But perhaps
The way ſeems difficult and ſteep, to ſcale
With upright wing againſt a higher foe.
Let ſuch bethink them, if the ſleepy drench
Of that forgetful lake benumn not ſtill,
That in our proper motion we aſcend
Up to our native ſeat: deſcent and fall
To us is adverſe. Who but felt of late
When the fierce foe hung on our brok'n rear
Inſulting, and purſu'd us through the deep,
With what compulſion and laborious flight
We ſunk thus low? the aſcent is eaſy then;
Th'event is fear'd; ſhould we again provoke
Our ſtronger, ſome worſe way his wrath may find
To our deſtruction: if there be in hell
Fear to be worſe deſtroy'd: what can be worſe
Than to dwell here, driv'n out from bliſs, condemn'd
In this abhorred deep to utter woe;
Where pain of unextinguiſhable fire
Muſt exerciſe *us without* hope of end,

The vaſſals of his anger, when the ſcourge
Inexorably, and the torturing hour
Calls us to penance? more deſtroy'd than thus
We ſhould be quite aboliſht and expire.
What fear we then? what doubt we to incenſe
His utmoſt ire? which to the highth enrag'd,
Will either quite conſume us, and reduce
To nothing this eſſential, happier far
Than miſerable to have eternal being:
Or if our ſubſtance be indeed divine,
And cannot ceaſe to be, we are at worſt
On this ſide nothing; and by proof we feel
Our power ſufficient to diſturb his heav'n,
And with perpetual inrodes to allarm,
Though inacceſſible, his fatal throne:
Which if not victory is yet revenge

Main reaſon to perſwade immediate war,
Did not diſſwade me moſt, and ſeem to caſt
Ominous conjecture on the whole ſucceſs:
When he who moſt excells in fact of arms,
In what he counſels and in what excells
Miſtruſtful, grounds his courage on deſpair
And utter diſſolution, as the ſcope
Of all his aim, after ſome dire revenge.
Firſt, what revenge? the towrs of heav'n are fill'd
With armed watch, that render all acceſs
Impregnable; oft on the bordering deep
Encamp their legions, or with obſcure wing
Scout far and wide into the realm of night,
Scorning ſurprize. Or could we break our way
By force, and at our heels all hell ſhould riſe
With blackeſt inſurrection, to confound
Heav'n's pureſt light, yet our great enemy
All incorruptible would on his throne
Sit unpolluted, and th'ethereal mould
Incapable of ſtain would ſoon expell
Her miſchief, and purge off the baſer fire,
Victorious. Thus repuls'd, our final hope
Is flat deſpair: we muſt exaſperate
Th'almighty victor to ſpend all his rage,
And that muſt end us, that muſt be our cure,
To be no more; ſad cure; for who would loſe,
Though full of pain, this intellectual being,
Thoſe thoughts that wander through eternity,
To periſh rather, ſwallow'd up and loſt
In the wide womb of uncreated night,
Devoid of *ſenſe and motion?* and who knows,

To puniſh endleſs? wherefore ceaſe we
Say they who counſel war, we are decree
Reſerv'd and deſtin'd to eternal woe;
Whatever doing, what can we ſuffer mo
What can we ſuffer worſe? is this then
Thus ſitting, thus conſulting, thus in an
What when we fled amain, purſu'd and
With heav'ns afflicting thunder, and be
The deep to ſhelter us? this hell then
A refuge from thoſe wounds: or when
Chain'd on the burning lake? that fure
What if the breath that kindl'd thoſe gri
Awak'd ſhould blow them into ſevenfol
And plunge us in the flames? or from
Should intermitted vengeance arm again
His red right hand to plague us? what
Her ſtores were open'd, and this firma

Under yon boyling ocean, wrapt in chains;
There to converſe with everlaſting groans,
Unrefpited, unpitied, unreprivʼd,
Ages of hopeleſs end; this would be worſe.
War therefore, open or conceal'd, alike
My voice diſſwades; for what can force or guile
With him, or who deceive his mind, whoſe eye
Views all things at one view? he from heav'ns highth
All theſe our motions vain, ſees and derides;
Not more almighty to reſiſt our might
Than wiſe to fruſtrate all our plots and wiles.
Shall we then live thus vile, the race of heav'n
Thus trampl'd, thus expell'd to ſuffer here
Chains and theſe torments? better theſe than worſe
By my advice; ſince fate inevitable
Subdues us, and omnipotent decree,
The victor's will. To ſuffer as to do,
Our ſtrength is equal, nor the law unjuſt
That ſo ordains: this was at firſt reſolv'd,
If we were wiſe, againſt ſo great a foe
Contending, and ſo doubtful what might fall.
I laugh, when thoſe who at the ſpear are bold
And vent'rous, if that fail them, ſhrink and fear
What yet they know muſt follow, to endure
Exile, or ignominy, or bonds, or pain,
The ſentence of their conqueror: this is now
Our doom; which if we can ſuſtain and bear,
Our ſupream foe in time may much remit
His anger, and perhaps thus far remov'd
Not mind us not offending, ſatisfi'd
With what is *puniſh't*; whence theſe raging fires

Of future days may bring, what chance,
Worth waiting, ſince our preſent lot app
For happy though but ill, for ill not wor
If we procure not to ourſelves more woe.
Thus Belial with words cloath'd in rea
Counſel'd ignoble eaſe, and peaceful flo
Not peace: and after him thus Mammo
Either to diſenthrone the king of heav
We war, if war be beſt, or to regain
Our own right loſt: him to unthrone w
May hope, when everlaſting fate ſhall
To fickle chance, and chaos judge the ſt
The former vain to hope argues as vain
The latter: for what place can be for
Within heav'n's bound, unleſs heav'n's
We overpower? ſuppoſe he ſhould relen
And publiſh grace to all, on promiſe n
Of new ſubjection; with what eyes cou

Ambrofial odours and ambrofial flowers,
Our fervile offerings. This muſt be our taſk
In heav'n, this our delight; how wearifom
Eternity ſo ſpent in worſhip paid
To whom we hate. Let us not then purſue
By force impoſſible, by leave obtain'd
Unacceptable, tho' in heav'n, our ſtate
Of ſplendid vaſſalage, but rather ſeek
Our own good from ourſelves, and from our own
Live to ourſelves, though in this vaſt receſs,
Free, and to none accountable, preferring
Hard liberty before the eaſy yoke
Of ſervile pomp. Our greatneſs will appear
Then moſt conſpicuous, when great things of ſmall,
Uſeful of hurtful, proſperous of adverſe
We can create, and in what place ſoe'er
Thrive under evil, and work eaſe out of pain
Through labour and indurance. This deep world
Of darkneſs do we dread? how oft amidſt
Thick clouds and dark doth heav'ns all-ruling ſire
Chuſe to reſide, his glory unobſcur'd,
And with the majeſty of darkneſs round
Covers his throne; from whence deep thunders roar
Muſt'ring their rage, and heav'n reſembles hell?
As he our darkneſs, cannot we his light
Imitate when we pleaſe? this deſart ſoil
Wants not her hidden luſtre, gemms and gold;
Nor want we ſkill or art, from whence to raiſe
Magnificence; and what can heav'n ſhew more?
Our torments alſo may in length of time
Become our elements, theſe piercing fires.

All thoughts of ...

He ſcarce had finiſh't, when ſuch murm
The aſſembly, as when hollow rocks ret
The ſound of bluſtering winds, which all
Had rous'd the ſea, now with hoarſe cade
Sea-faring men o'rewatcht, whoſe bark by
Or pinnance anchors in a craiggy bay
After the tempeſt: ſuch applauſe was he
As Mammon ended, and his ſentence ple
Adviſing peace: for ſuch another field
They dreaded worſe than hell: ſo much
Of thunder and the ſword of Michael
Wrought ſtill within them; and no leſs
To found this nether empire, which mig
By policy, and long proceſs of time,
In emulation oppoſite to heav'n.
Which when Beelzebub perceiv'd, than
Satan except, none higher ſat, with grav

The weight of mightieſt monarchies; his look
Drew audience and attention, ſtill as night
Or ſummer's noon-tide air, while thus he ſpake.
Thrones and imperial powers, off-ſpring of heav'n,
Ethereal virtues; or theſe titles now
Muſt we renounce, and changing ſtile be call'd
Princes of hell? for ſo the popular vote
Inclines, here to continue, and build up here
A growing empire; doubtleſs; while we dream,
And know not that the king of heav'n hath doom'd
This place our dungeon, not our ſafe retreat
Beyond his potent arm, to live exempt
From heav'n's high juriſdiction, in new league
Banded againſt his throne, but to remain
In ſtricteſt bondage, though thus far remov'd,
Under th'inevitable curb, reſerv'd
His captive multitude: for he, be ſure,
In highth or depth, ſtill firſt and laſt will reign
Sole king, and of his kingdom loſe no part
By our revolt, but over hell extend
His empire, and with iron ſceptre rule
Us here, as with his golden thoſe in heaven.
What ſit we then projecting peace and war?
War hath determin'd us, and foil'd with loſs
Irreparable; terms of peace yet none
Voutſaf't or ſought; for what peace will be giv'n
To us enſlav'd, but cuſtody ſevere,
And ſtripes, and arbitrary puniſhment
Inflicted? and what peace can we return,
But to our power hoſtility and hate,
Untam'd *reluctance*, and revenge though ſlow,

Yet ever plotting how the conqueror leaſt
May reap his conqueſt, and may leaſt rejoice
In doing what we moſt in ſuffering feel?
Nor will occaſion want, nor ſhall we need
With dangerous expedition to invade
Heav'n, whoſe high walls fear no aſſault or ſiege,
Or ambuſh from the deep. What if we find
Some eaſier enterpriſe? there is a place
(If antient and prophetic fame in heav'n
Err not) another world, the happy ſeat
Of ſome new race call'd Man, about this time
To be created like to us, though leſs
In power and excellence, but favour'd more
Of him who rules above; ſo was his will
Pronounc'd among the gods, and by an oath,
That ſhook heav'n's whole circumference, confir

May prove their foe, and with repenting hand
Abolish his own works. This would surpass
Common revenge, and interrupt his joy
In our confusion, and our joy up-raise
In his disturbance; when his darling sons
Hurl'd headlong to partake with us, shall curse
Their frail original, and faded bliss,
Faded so soon. Advise if this be worth
Attempting, or to sit in darkness here
Hatching vain empires. Thus Beelzebub
Pleaded his devilish counsel, first devis'd
By Satan, and in part propos'd: for whence,
But from the author of all ill could spring
So deep a malice, to confound the race
Of mankind in one root, and earth with hell
To mingle and involve, done all to spite
The great Creator? but their spite still serves
His glory to augment. The bold design
Pleas'd highly those infernal states, and joy
Sparkl'd in all their eyes; with full assent
They vote: whereat his speech he thus renews.
Well have ye judg'd, well ended long debate,
Synod of Gods, and like to what ye are,
Great things resolv'd, which from the lowest deep
Will once more lift us up, in spite of fate,
Nearer our ancient seat; perhaps in view
Of those bright confines, whence with neighbouring arms
And opportune excursion we may chance
Re-enter heav'n; or else in some wild zone
Dwell not unvisited of heav'n's fair light
Secure, and at *the brightning* orient beam

Purge of this gloom; the ſoft delicious air,
To heal the ſcar of theſe corroſive fires
Shall breath her balm. But firſt whom ſhall we ſe
In ſearch of this new world, whom ſhall we find
Sufficient? who ſhall tempt with wandring feet
The dark unbottom'd infinite abyſs,
And through the palpable obſcure find out
His uncouth way, or ſpread his airy flight
Upborn with indefatigable wings
Over the vaſt abrupt, ere he arrive
The happy iſle; what ſtrength, what art can then
Suffice, or what evaſion bear him ſafe
Through the ſtrict ſenteries and ſtations thick
Of angels watching round? here he had need
All circumſpection, and we now no leſs

reaſon hath deep ſilence and demur
l us, though undiſmaid : long is the way
hard, that out of hell leads up to light ;
riſon ſtrong, this huge convex of fire,
ıgeous to devour, immures us round
old, and gates of burning adamant
d over us prohibit all egreſs.
: paſt, if any paſs, the void profound
ıeſſential night receives him next
-gaping, and with utter loſs of being
ıtens him, plung'd in that abortive gulph.
ınce he ſcape into whatever world,
ıknown region, what remains him leſs
unknown dangers and as hard eſcape.
ſhould ill become this throne, O peers,
this imperial ſov'ranty, adorn'd
ſplendor, arm'd with power, if aught propos'd
judg'd of publick moment, in the ſhape
fficulty or danger could deter
om attempting. Wherefore do I aſſume
royalties, and not refuſe to reign,
ing to accept as great a ſhare
ızard as of honour, due alike
m who reigns, and ſo much to him due
ızard more, as he above the reſt
honour'd ſits ? go therefore mighty powers,
ur of heav'n, though fall'n ; intend at home,
: here ſhall be our home, what beſt may eaſe
ɔreſent miſery, and render hell
tolerable ; if there be cure or charm
ſpite or deceive, or ſlack the pain

Of this ill manſion: intermit no watch
Againſt a wakeful foe, while I abroad
Through all the coaſts of dark deſtruction ſeek
Deliverance for us all: this enterprize
None ſhall partake with me. Thus ſaying roſe
The monarch, and prevented all reply,
Prudent, leſt from his reſolution rais'd
Others among the chief might offer now
(Certain to be refus'd) what erſt they fear'd;
And ſo refus'd might in opinion ſtand
His rivals, winning cheap the high repute
Which he through hazard huge muſt earn. But
Dreaded not more the adventure than his voice
Forbidding; and at once with him they roſe;
Their riſing all at once was as the ſound
Of thunder heard remote. Towards him they b

Extend his ev'ning beam, the fields revive,
The birds their notes renew, and bleating herds
Attest their joy, that hill and valley rings.
O ſhame to men! devil with devil damn'd
Firm concord holds, men only diſagree
Of creatures rational, though under hope
Of heav'nly grace: and God proclaiming peace,
Yet live in hatred, enmity, and ſtrife
Among themſelves, and levie cruel wars,
Waſting the earth, each other to deſtroy:
As if (which might induce us to accord)
Man had not helliſh foes anow beſides,
That day and night for his deſtruction wait.
The Stygian council thus diſſolv'd; and forth
In order came the grand infernal peers,
Midſt came their mighty Paramount, and ſeem'd
Alone th'antagoniſt of heav'n, nor leſs
Than hell's dread emperour with pomp ſupream,
And god-like imitated ſtate; him round
A globe of fierie ſeraphim inclos'd
With bright emblazonrie, and horrent arms.
Then of their ſeſſion ended they bid cry
With trumpets regal ſound the great reſult:
Toward the four winds four ſpeedy cherubim
Put to their mouths the ſounding alchymie
By herald's voice explain'd: the hollow abyſs
Heard far and wide, and all the hoſt of hell
With deafning ſhout, return'd them loud acclaim.
Thence more at eaſe their minds and ſomewhat rais'd
By falſe preſumptuous hope, the ranged powers
Diſband, and wandring, each his ſeveral way

Purſues, as inclination or ſad choice
Leads him perplext, where he may likelieſt find
Truce to his reſtleſs thoughts, and entertain
The irkſome hours, till his great chief return.
Part on the plain, or in the air ſublime
Upon the wing, or in ſwift race contend,
As at th'Olympian games or Pythian fields;
Part curb their fierie ſteeds, or ſhun the goal
With rapid wheels, or fronted brigades form.
As when to warn proud cities war appears
Wag'd in the troubled ſkie, and armies ruſh
To battle in the clouds, before each van
Prick forth the airie knights, and couch their ſpe
Till thickeſt legions cloſe; with feats of arms
From either end of heav'n the welkin burns.
Others with vaſt Typhoean rage more fell

The thronging audience. In diſcourſe more ſweet
(For Eloquence the ſoul, ſong charms the ſenſe,)
Others apart ſat on a hill retir'd,
In thoughts more elevate, and reaſon'd high
Of providence, foreknowledge, will and fate,
Fixt fate, free will, foreknowledge abſolute,
And found no end, in wandring mazes loſt.
Of good and evil much they argu'd then,
Of happineſs and final miſery,
Paſſion and apathie, and glory and ſhame,
Vain wiſdom all, and falſe philoſophy:
Yet with a pleaſing ſorcerie could charm
Pain for a while or anguiſh, and excite
Fallacious hope, or arm th'obdured breaſt
With ſtubborn patience as with triple ſteel.
Another part in ſquadrons and groſs bands,
On bold adventure to diſcover wide
That diſmal world, if any clime perhaps
Might yield them eaſier habitation, bend
Four ways their flying march, along the banks
Of four infernal rivers that diſgorge
Into the burning lake their baleful ſtreams;
Abhorred Styx the flood of deadly hate,
Sad Acheron of ſorrow, black and deep;
Cocytus, nam'd of lamentation loud
Heard on the rueful ſtream; fierce Phlegeton
Whoſe waves of torrent fire inflame with rage.
Far off from theſe a ſlow and ſilent ſtream,
Lethe the river of oblivion rowls
Her watry labyrinth, whereof who drinks,
Forthwith his former ſtate and being forgets,

Forgets both joy and grief, pleaſure and pain.
Beyond this flood a frozen continent
Lies dark and wild, beat with perpetual ſtorms
Of whirlwind and dire hail, which on firm land
Thaws not, but gathers heap, and ruin ſeems
Of ancient pile; all elſe deep ſnow and ice,
A gulph profound as that Serbonian bog
Betwixt Damiata and mount Caſus old,
Where armies whole have ſunk: the parching air
Burns frore, and cold performs the effect of fire.
Thither by harpy footed furies hail'd,
At certain revolutions all the damn'd
Are brought: and feel by turns the bitter change
Of fierce extreams, extreams by change more fie

r'd first their lamentable lot, and found
st: through many a dark and drearie vale
pass'd, and many a region dolorous,
many a frozen, many a fierie Alpe,
s, caves, lakes, fens, bogs, dens, and shades of death,
verse of death, which God by curse
d evil, for evil only good,
e all life dies, death lives, and nature breeds
rse, all monstrous, all prodigious things,
inable, inutterable, and worse
fables yet have feign'd, or fear conceiv'd,
ns and Hydra's, and Chimeras dire.
n while the adversary of God and man,
with thoughts inflam'd of highest design,
n swift wings, and towards the gates of hell
es his solitary flight; sometimes
urs the right hand coast, sometimes the left,
haves with level wing the deep, then soares
the fiery concave towring high.
en far off at sea a fleet descri'd
in the clouds, by equinoctial winds
failing from Bengala, or the isles
rnate and Tidore, whence merchants bring
spicie drugs: they on the trading flood
gh the wide Ethiopian to the cape
mming nightly toward the pole. So seem'd
f the flying fiend: at last appear
ounds high reaching to the horrid roof,
lurice threefold the gates; three folds were brass,
iron, three of adamantine rock,
etrable, impal'd with circling fire

Yet unconſum'd. Before the gates there ſat
On either ſide a formidable ſhape;
The one ſeem'd woman to the waſte, and fair,
But ended foul in many a ſcaly fold
Voluminous, and vaſt, a ſerpent arm'd
With mortal ſting: about her middle round
A cry of hell-hounds never ceaſing bark'd
With wide Cerberian mouths full loud, and run
A hideous peal: yet, when they liſt, would cre
If aught diſturb'd their noiſe, into her womb,
And kennel there, yet there ſtill bark'd and how
Within unſeen. Far leſs abhor'd than theſe
Vex'd Scylla, bathing in the ſea that parts
Calabria from the hoarſe Trinacrian ſhore:
Nor uglier follow the night hag, when call'd

ed thing naught valu'd he nor ſhun'd ;
with diſdainful look thus firſt began.
hence and what art thou, execrable ſhape,
dar'ſt, though grim and terrible, advance
miſcreated front athwart my way
ınder gates ? through them I mean to paſs,
be affur'd, without leave aſkt of thee :
e, or taſte thy folly, and learn by proof,
born, not to contend with ſpirits of heav'n.
'hom the goblin full of wrath reply'd,
hou that traitor angel, art thou he,
firſt broke peace in heav'n and faith, till then
ok'n, and in proud rebellious arms
' after him the third part of heav'n's ſons
ır'd againſt the higheſt, for which both thou
they outcaſt from God, are here condemn'd
raſte eternal days in woe and pain ?
reck'n'ſt thou thyſelf with ſpirits of heav'n,
doom'd, and breath'ſt defiance here and ſcorn
re I reign king, and to enrage thee more,
king and lord ? back to thy puniſhment,
fugitive, and to thy ſpeed add wings,
: with a whip of ſcorpions I purſue
lingring, or with one ſtroke of this dart
ıge horror ſeiſe thee, and pangs unfelt before.
ake the grieſly terrour, and in ſhape,
eaking, and ſo threatning, grew tenfold
e dreadful and deform : on th'other ſide
aſt with indignation Satan ſtood
rrify'd, and like a comet burn'd,
t fires the *length of Ophiucus* huge

Over the Caſpian, then ſtand front to
Hov'ring a ſpace, till winds the ſignal
To join their dark encounter in mid ai
So frown'd the mighty combatants, th
Grew darker at their frown, ſo matchl
For never but once more was either lik
To meet ſo great a foe: and now grea
Had been atchiev'd, whereof all hell h
Had not the ſnaky ſorcereſs that ſat
Faſt by hell-gate, and kept the fatal ke
Ris'n, and with hideous outcry ruſh'd b
O Father, what intends thy hand, ſ
Againſt thy only ſon? what fury, O ſo
Poſſeſſes thee to bend that mortal dart
Againſt thy father's head? and know'ſt
For him who ſits above and laughs the
At thee ordain'd his drudge, to execute

hat thing thou art, thus double-form'd, and why
this infernal vale firſt met thou call'ſt
: father, and that fantaſm, call'ſt my ſon?
now thee not, nor ever ſaw till now
ht more deteſtable than him and thee.
f whom thus the portreſs of hell-gate reply'd;
ſt thou forgot me then? and do I ſeem
w in thine eye ſo foul? once deem'd ſo fair
eav'n, when at th'aſſembly, and in fight
all the ſeraphim with thee combin'd
old conſpiracy againſt heav'n's king,
on a ſudden miſerable pain
riz'd thee, dim thine eyes, and dizzy ſwumm
arkneſs, while thy head flames thick and faſt
w forth, till on the left ſide op'ning wide,
ſt to thee in ſhape and count'nance bright,
ı ſhining heav'nly fair, a goddeſs arm'd
of thy head I ſprung: amazement ſeiz'd
he hoſt of heav'n; back they recoil'd afraid
rſt, and call'd me Sin, and for a ſign
ntous held me; but familiar grown
ıs'd, and with attractive graces won
noſt averſe, thee chiefly, who full oft
:lf in me thy perfect image viewing
n'ſt enamour'd, and ſuch joy thou took'ſt
me in ſecret, that my womb conceiv'd
wing burden. Mean while war aroſe,
fields were fought in heav'n; wherein remain'd
what could elſe) to our almighty foe
victory, to our *part loſs and* rout
igh all the Empyrean: down they fell

Driv'n headlong from the pitch of heav'n, down
Into this deep, and in the general fall
I alſo; at which time this powerful key
Into my hand was giv'n, with charge to keep
Theſe gates for ever ſhut, which none can paſs
Without my op'ning. Penſive here I ſat
Alone, but long I ſat not, till my womb
Pregnant by thee, and now exceſſive grown
Prodigious motion felt and rueful throes.
At laſt this odious offspring whom thou ſeeſt
Thine own begotten, breaking violent way
Tore through my entrails, that with fear and pain
Diſtorted, all my nether ſhape thus grew
Transform'd: but he my inbred enemie
Forth iſſu'd, brandiſhing his fatal dart
Made to deſtroy: I fled, and cry'd out Death;
Hell trembl'd at the hideous name, and ſigh'd
From all her caves, and back reſounded Death.

Before mine eyes in oppoſition ſits
Grim Death my ſon and foe, who ſets them on,
And me his parent would full ſoon devour
For want of other prey, but that he knows
His end with mine involv'd; and knows that I
Should prove a bitter morſel, and his bane,
When ever that ſhall be; ſo fate pronounc'd.
But thou O father, I forewarn thee, ſhun
His deadly arrow; neither vainly hope
To be invulnerable in thoſe bright arms,
Though temper'd heav'nly, for that mortal dint,
Save he who reigns above, none can reſiſt.

She finiſh'd, and the ſubtle fiend his lore
Soon learn'd, now milder, and thus anſwer'd ſmooth.
Dear daughter, ſince thou claim'ſt me for thy Sire,
And my fair ſon here ſhow'ſt me, the dear pledge
Of dalliance had with thee in heav'n, and joys
Then ſweet, now ſad to mention, through dire change
Befall'n us unforeſeen, unthought of, know
I come no enemie, but to ſet free
From out this dark and diſmal houſe of pain,
Both him and thee, and all the heav'nly hoſt
Of ſpirits that in our juſt pretences arm'd
Fell with us from on high: from them I go
This uncouth errand ſole, and one for all
Myſelf expoſe, with lonely ſteps to tread
Th'unfounded deep, and through the void immenſe
To ſearch with wandring queſt a place foretold
Should be, and, by concurring ſigns, ere now
Created vaſt and round, a place of bliſs
In the pourlieues of heav'n, and therein plac't

A race of upſtart creatures, to ſupply
Perhaps our vacant room, though more remov'd,
Leſt heav'n ſurcharg'd with potent multitude
Might hap to move new broils: be this or aught
Than this more ſecret now deſign'd, I haſte
To know, and this once known, ſhall ſoon return
And bring ye to the place where thou and Death
Shall dwell at eaſe, and up and down unſeen
Wing ſilently the buxom air, imbalm'd
With odours; there ye ſhall be fed and fill'd
Immeaſurably, all things ſhall be your prey.
He ceas'd, for both ſeem'd highly pleas'd, and D
Grinn'd horrible a gaſtly ſmile, to hear
His famine ſhould be fill'd, and bleſt his maw
Deſtin'd to that good hour: no leſs rejoyc'd
His mother bad, and thus beſpake her Sire.
The key of this infernal pit by due,
And by command of heav'n's all-powerful king,

[redacted] mine own brood, that on my bowels feed:
Thou art my father, thou my author, thou
My being gav'ſt me; whom ſhould I obey
But thee, whom follow? thou wilt bring me ſoon
To that new world of light and bliſs, among
The Gods who live at eaſe, where I ſhall reign
At thy right hand voluptuous, as beſeems
Thy daughter and thy darling, without end.
Thus ſaying, from her ſide the fatal key,
Sad inſtrument of all our woe, ſhe took;
And towards the gate rolling her beſtial train,
Forthwith the huge portcullis high up drew,
Which but herſelf not all the Stygian powers
Could once have moy'd; then in the key-hole turns
Th'intricate wards, and every bolt and bar
Of maſſie iron or ſolid rock with eaſe
Unfaſtens: on a ſudden open fly
With impetuous recoil and jarring ſound
Th'infernal doors, and on their hinges grate
Harſh thunder, that the loweſt bottom ſhook
Of Erebus. She open'd, but to ſhut
Excell'd her power; the gates wide open ſtood,
That with extended wings a banner'd hoſt
Under ſpread enſigns marching might paſs through
With horſe and chariots rank'd in looſe array;
So wide they ſtood, and like a furnace mouth
Caſt forth redounding ſmoak and ruddy flame.
Before their eyes in ſudden view appear
The ſecrets of the hoarie deep, a dark
Illimitable Ocean without bound,
Without dimenſion, where length, breadth, and highth,

And time and place are loſt; where eldeſt Nigh
And Chaos, anceſtors of nature, hold
Eternal Anarchie, amidſt the noiſe
Of endleſs wars, and by confuſion ſtand.
For hot, cold, moiſt, and dry, four champions
Strive here for maiſtrie, and to battle bring
Their embryon atoms; they around the flag
Of each his faction, in their ſeveral clans,
Light-arm'd or heavy, ſharp, ſmooth, ſwift or
Swarm populous, unnumber'd as the ſands
Of Barca or Cyrene's torrid ſoil,
Levied to ſide with warring winds, and poiſe
Their lighter wings. To whom theſe moſt ad
He rules a moment; Chaos umpire ſits,
And by deciſion more embroils the fray

were falling, and theſe elements
had from her axle torn
ſt earth. At laſt his ſail-broad vannes
for flight, and in the ſurging ſmoak
urns the ground, thence many a league
oudy chair aſcending rides
but that ſeat ſoon failing, meets
ritie: all unawares
his pennons vain plumb down he drops
nd fathom deep, and to this hour
been falling, had not by ill chance
rebuff of ſome tumultuous cloud
th fire and nitre hurried him
iles aloft: that furie ſtay'd,
a boggie Syrtis, neither ſea,
ry land: nigh founder'd on he fares,
e crude conſiſtence, half on foot,
s behoves him now both oar and ſail.
Gryphon through the wilderneſs
d courſe o'er hill and moarie dale,
Arimaſpian, who by ſtelth
his wakeful cuſtody purloin'd
d gold: ſo eagerly the fiend
ſteep, through ſtrait, rough, denſe or rare,
hands, wings or feet purſues his way,
or ſinks, or wades, or creeps, or flies:
a univerſal hubbub wild
s ſounds and voices all confus'd
gh the hollow dark aſſaults his ear
ſt vehemence: thither he plyes,
to meet *them whatever* power

: consort of his reign ; and by them stood
us and Ades, and the dreaded name
Demogorgon ; Rumor next and Chance,
l Tumult and Confusion all imbroil'd,
l Discord with a thousand various mouths.
'hom Satan turning boldly, thus. Ye powers
l spirits of this nethermost abyss,
os and ancient Night, I come no spy,
h purpose to explore or to disturb
secrets of your realm, but by constraint
ıdring this darksome desart, as my way
through your spacious empire up to light,
ıe, and without guide, half lost, I seek
ıt readiest path leads where your gloomy boun
fine with heav'n ; or if some other place
n your dominion won, th'ethereal king
ıfles lately, thither to arrive
ıvel this profound direct my course ;

Your's be th'advantage all, mine the revenge.
Thus Satan; and him thus the anarch old
With fault'ring ſpeech and viſage incompos'd
Anſwer'd. I know thee, ſtranger, who thou art,
That mighty leading angel, who of late
Made head againſt heav'n's king, though overthrow
I ſaw and heard, for ſuch a numerous hoſt
Fled not in ſilence through the frighted deep
With ruin upon ruin, rout on rout,
Confuſion worſe confounded; and heav'n gates
Pour'd out by millions her victorious bands
Purſuing. I upon my frontiers here
Keep reſidence; if all I can will ſerve,
That little which is left ſo to defend,
Encroacht on ſtill through our inteſtine broils
Weakning the ſceptre of old Night: firſt hell
Your dungeon ſtretching far and wide beneath;
Now lately heav'n and earth, another world,
Hung o're my realm, link'd in a golden chain
To that ſide heav'n from whence your legions fell
If that way be your walk, you have not far;
So much the nearer danger; go and ſpeed;
Havock and ſpoil and ruin are my gain.
He ceas'd; and Satan ſtay'd not to reply,
But glad that now his ſea ſhould find a ſhore,
With freſh alacrity and force renew'd
Springs upward like a pyramid of fire
Into the wild expanſe, and through the ſhock
Of fighting elements, on all ſides round
Environ'd wins his way; harder beſet
And more endanger'd, *then* when Argo paſs'd

Over the dark abyſs, whoſe boiling gulf
Tamely endur'd a bridge of wondrous le
From hell continu'd reaching th'utmoſt
Of this frail world; by which the ſpirits
With eaſie intercourſe paſs to and fro
To tempt or puniſh mortals, except who
God and good angels guard by ſpecial gra
But now at laſt the ſacred influence
Of light appears, and from the walls of h
Shoots far into the boſom of dim Night
A glimmering dawn; here nature firſt beg
Her fardeſt verge, and Chaos to retire
As from her utmoſt works a brok'n foe
With tumult leſs and with leſs hoſtile din,
That Satan with leſs toil, and now with ea
Wafts on the calmer wave by dubious light
And like a weather-beaten veſſel holds
Gladly the port

h opal towrs and battlements adorn'd
living ſaphire, once his native ſeat;
l faſt by hanging in a golden chain
s pendant world, in bigneſs as a ſtar
ſmalleſt magnitude cloſe by the moon.
ither full fraught with miſchievous revenge,
carft, and in a curſed hour he hies.

The End of the Second Book.

... express thee unblam'd? since
And never but in unapproached light
Dwelt from eternity, dwelt then in th
Bright effluence of bright essence incre
Or hear'st thou rather pure ethereal s
Whose fountain who shall tell? befor
Before the heav'ns thou wert, and at t
Of God, as with a mantle did invest
The rising world of waters dark and c
Won from the void and formless infin
Thee I revisit now with bolder wing,
Escap't the Stygian pool, though long
In that obscure sojourn, while in my fl
Through utter and through middle da
With other notes than to th'Orphean l
I sung of Chaos and eternal Night,
Taught by the heav'nly muse to ventur
The dark descent, and up to re-ascend

lear ſpring, or ſhaddie grove, or ſunnie hill,
mit with the love of ſacred ſong; but chief
'hee Sion and the flowrie brooks beneath
'hat waſh thy hallow'd feet, and warbling flow,
lightly I viſit: nor ſometimes forget
Thoſe other two equal'd with me in fate,
ſo were I equal'd with them in renown,
Blind Thamyris and blind Mæonides,
And Tirefias and Phineus prophets old.
Then feed on thoughts, that voluntary move
Harmonious numbers; as the wakeful bird
Sings darkling, and in ſhadieſt covert hid
Tunes her nocturnal note. Thus with the year
Seaſons return, but not to me returns
Day, or the ſweet approach of ev'n or morn,
Or ſight of vernal bloom, or ſummer's roſe,
Or flocks, or herds, or human face divine;
But cloud inſtead, and ever-during dark
Surrounds me, from the chearful ways of men
Cut off, and for the book of knowledge fair
Preſented with a univerſal blanc
Of nature's works to me expung'd and raz'd,
And wiſdom at one entrance quite ſhut out.
So much the rather thou celeſtial light
Shine inward, and the mind through all her powers
Irradiate, there plant eyes, all miſt from thence
Purge and diſperſe, that I may ſee and tell
Of things inviſible to mortal ſight.
Now had the almighty father from above,
From the pure empyrean where he ſits
High thron'd above all highth bent down his eye,

Of mankind, in the happy garden pla
Reaping immortal fruits of joy and lo
Uninterrupted joy, unrival'd love
In bliſsful ſolitude; he then ſurvey'd
Hell and the gulf between, and Satan
Coaſting the wall of heav'n on this ſi
In the dun air ſublime, and ready no
To ſtoop with wearied wings, and will
On the bare outſide of this world, that
Firm land imboſom'd without firmamen
Uncertain which, in ocean or in air.
Him God beholding from his proſpect h
Wherein paſt, preſent, future he behol
Thus to his only Son foreſeeing ſpake.
Only begotten Son, ſeeſt thou what
Tranſports our adverſarie, whom no bo
Preſcrib'd, no barrs of hell, nor all the

[redacted] man there plac't, with purpoſe to eſſay
[redacted] him by force he can deſtroy, or worſe,
[redacted] ſome falſe guile pervert; and ſhall pervert;
[redacted] man will hearkn to his glozing lyes,
[redacted] and eaſily tranſgreſs the ſole command,
[redacted] ſole pledge of his obedience: ſo will fall
[redacted] and his faithleſs progenie: whoſe fault?
[redacted] whoſe but his own? ingrate, he had of me
[redacted] All he could have; I made him juſt and right,
[redacted] ſufficient to have ſtood, though free to fall.
[redacted] Such I created all th'ethereal powers
[redacted] And ſpirits, both them who ſtood and them who fail'd;
[redacted] Freely they ſtood who ſtood, and fell who fell.
[redacted] Not free, what proof could they have giv'n ſincere
[redacted] Of true allegiance, conſtant faith or love,
[redacted] Where only what they needs muſt do, appear'd,
[redacted] Not what they would? what praiſe could they receive?
[redacted] What pleaſure I from ſuch obedience paid,
[redacted] When will and reaſon (reaſon alſo is choice)
[redacted] Uſeleſs and vain, of freedom both deſpoil'd,
[redacted] Made paſſive both, had ſerv'd neceſſitie,
[redacted] Not me. They therefore as to right belong'd,
[redacted] So were created, nor can juſtly accuſe
[redacted] Their maker, or their making, or their fate;
[redacted] As if predeſtination over-rul'd
[redacted] Their will, diſpos'd by abſolute decree
[redacted] Or high foreknowledge; they themſelves decreed
[redacted] Their own revolt, not I: if I foreknew,
[redacted] Foreknowledge had no influence on their fault,
[redacted] Which had no leſs prov'd certain unforeknown.
[redacted] So without leaſt *impulſe or ſhadow* of fate,

The firſt ſort by their own ſuggeſtic
Self-tempted, ſelf-deprav'd: man ſ
By the other firſt: man therefore ſh
The other none: in mercy and juſti
Through heav'n and earth, ſo ſhall
But mercy firſt and laſt ſhall brighte

Thus while God ſpake, ambroſial
All heav'n, and in the bleſſed ſpirits
Senſe of new joy ineffable diffus'd:
Beyond compare the Son of God w
Moſt glorious, in him all his Father
Subſtantially expreſt, and in his fac
Divine compaſſion viſibly appear'd,
Love without end, and without me
Which uttering thus he to his fathe
O father, gracious was that word w
Thy ſovran ſentence, that man ſhou

[redacted] circumvented thus by fraud, though join'd
[redacted] his own folly? that be from thee far,
[redacted] far be from thee, father, who art judge
[redacted] all things made, and judgeſt only right,
[redacted] shall the adverſarie thus obtain
[redacted] end, and fruſtrate thine, ſhall he fulfill
[redacted] malice, and thy goodneſs bring to naught,
[redacted] proud return though to his heavier doom,
[redacted] with revenge accompliſh't and to hell
[redacted] draw after him the whole race of mankind,
[redacted] him corrupted? or wilt thou thyſelf
[redacted] abolish thy creation, and unmake,
[redacted] him, what for thy glory thou haſt made?
ſhould thy goodneſs and thy greatneſs both
queſtion'd and blaſphem'd without defence.
whom the great Creator thus reply'd.
bon, in whom my ſoul hath chief delight,
n of my boſom, ſon who art alone
word, my wiſdom, and effectual might,
haſt thou ſpok'n as my thoughts are, all
my eternal purpoſe hath decreed;
n ſhall not quite be loſt, but ſav'd who will.
not of will in him, but grace in me
ly voutſaft; once more I will renew
lapſed powers, though forfeit and enthrall'd
ſin to foul exorbitant deſires;
held by me, yet once more he ſhall ſtand
even ground againſt his mortal foe,
me upheld, that he may know how frail
fall'n condition is, and to me owe
his deliv'rance, and to none but me.

To pray, repent, and bring obedience c
To prayer, repentance, and obedience di
Though but endeavor'd with ſincere inte
Mine ear ſhall not be ſlow, mine eye n
And I will place within them as a guid
My umpire conſcience, whom if they wil
Light after light well us'd they ſhall att
And to the end perſiſting, ſafe arrive.
This my long ſufferance and my day of
They who neglect and ſcorn, ſhall never
But hard be hard'nd, blind be blinded m
That they may ſtumble on, and deeper
And none but ſuch from mercy I exclude.
But yet all is not done; man diſobeying,
Diſloyal breaks his fealtie, and ſins
Againſt the high ſupremacy of heav'n.
Affecting God-head, and ſo loſing all

Which of ye will be mortal to redeem
Man's mortal crime, and juſt th'unjuſt to ſave,
Dwells in all heav'n charity ſo deare?
He aſk'd, but all the heav'nly quire ſtood mute,
And ſilence was in heav'n: on man's behalf
Patron or interceſſor none appear'd.
Much leſs that durſt upon his own head draw
The deadly forfeiture, and ranſom ſet.
And now without redemption all mankind
Muſt have been loſt, adjudg'd to death and hell
By doom ſevere, had not the ſon of God,
In whom the fulneſs dwells of love divine,
His dearеſt mediation thus renew'd.
Father, thy word is paſt, man ſhall find grace;
And ſhall grace not find means, that finds her way,
The ſpeedieſt of thy winged meſſengers,
To viſit all thy creatures, and to all
Comes unprevented, unimplor'd, unſought,
Happie for man, ſo coming; he her aid
Can never ſeek, once dead in ſins and loſt;
Atonement for himſelf or offering meet,
Indebted and undone, hath none to bring:
Behold me then, me for him, life for life
Offer, on me let thine anger fall;
Account me man; I for his ſake will leave
Thy boſom, and this glory next to thee
Freely put off, and for him laſtly die
Well pleas'd, on me let Death wreck all his rage;
Under his gloomie power I ſhall not long
Lie vanquiſh'd; thou haſt giv'n me to poſſeſs
Life in *myſelf for ever, by thee* I live,

Though now to death I yield, and am his due
All that of me can die, yet that debt paid,
Thou wilt not leave me in the loathſome grave
His prey, nor ſuffer my unſpotted ſoul
For ever with corruption there to dwell;
But I ſhall riſe victorious, and ſubdue
My vanquiſher, ſpoil'd of his vanted ſpoil;
Death his death's wound ſhall then receive, and ſt
Inglorious, of his mortal ſting diſarm'd.
I through the ample air in triumph high
Shall lead hell captive maugre hell, and ſhow
The powers of darkneſs bound. Thou at the ſight
Pleas'd, out of heav'n ſhalt look down and ſmile,
While by thee rais'd I ruin all my foes,
Death laſt, and with his carcaſs glut the grave:

hyſelf man among men on earth,
a, when time ſhall be, of virgin ſeed.
ous birth: be thou in Adam's room
of all mankind, though Adam's ſon.
periſh all men, ſo in thee
a ſecond root ſhall be reſtor'd
as are reſtor'd, without thee none.
makes guilty all his ſons, thy merit
hall abſolve them who renounce
n both righteous and unrighteous deeds,
in thee tranſplanted, and from thee
new life. So man, as is moſt juſt,
by for man, be judg'd and die,
g riſe, and riſing with him raiſe
ren, ranſom'd with his own dear life.
dy love ſhall out do helliſh hate,
› death, and dying to redeem,

With thee thy manhood alſo to this throne;
Here ſhalt thou ſit incarnate, here ſhalt reign
Both God and man, ſon both of God and man
Anointed univerſal king; all power
I give thee, reign for ever, and aſſume
Thy merits; under thee as head ſupream
Thrones, princedoms, powers, dominions I reduce
All knees to thee ſhall bow, of them that bide
In heaven or earth, or under earth in hell;
When thou attended gloriouſly from heav'n
Shalt in the ſkie appear, and from thee ſend
The ſummoning arch-angels to proclaim
Thy dread tribunal: forthwith from all winds
The living, and forthwith the cited dead
Of all paſt ages to the general doom
Shall haſten, ſuch a peal ſhall rouſe their ſleep.
Then all thy ſaints aſſembl'd, thou ſhalt judge
Bad men and

and love triumphing, and fair truth.
u thy regal ſcepter ſhalt lay by,
ſcepter then no more ſhall need,
be All in All. But all ye Gods,
n, who to compaſs all this dies,
: Son, and honour him as me.
: had th'Almighty ceas'd, but all
itude of angels with a ſhout
rom numbers without number, ſweet
leſt voices, uttering joy, heav'n rung
ilee: and loud hoſanna's fill'd
il regions: lowly reverent
either throne they bow, and to the ground
mn adoration down they caſt
wns inwove with amarant and gold,
l amarant, a flour which once
iſe, faſt by the tree of life
bloom, but ſoon for man's offence
n remov'd where firſt it grew, there grows,
rs aloft ſhading the fount of life,
re the river of bliſs through midſt of heav'n
re Elifian flours her amber ſtream;
ſe that never fade the ſpirits elect
ir reſplendent locks inwreath'd with beams,
looſe garlands thick thrown off, the bright
it that like a ſea of Jaſper ſhon
'd with celeſtial roſes ſmil'd.
own'd again their gold'n harps they took,
er tun'd, that glittering by their ſide
vers hung, and with preamble ſweet
ming ſymphonie they introduce

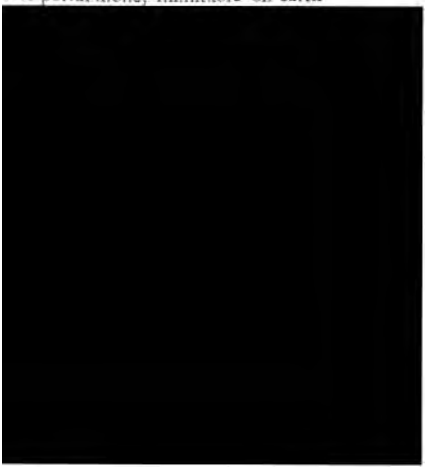
fountain of light, thyſelf inviſible
Amidſt the glorious brightneſs where thou ſ
Thron'd inacceſſible, but when thou ſhad'ſt
The full blaze of thy beams, and through a
Drawn round about thee like a radiant ſhri
Dark with exceſſive bright thy ſkirts appear,
Yet dazle heav'n, that brighteſt Seraphim
Approach not, but with both wings veil the
Thee next they ſang of all creation firſt,
Begotten ſon, divine ſimilitude,
In whoſe conſpicuous count'nance, without
Made viſible, th'almighty father ſhines,
Whom elſe no creature can behold; on the
Impreſt the effulgence of his glory abides,
Tranſfus'd on thee his ample ſpirit reſts.
He heav'n of heav'ns and all the powers the
By thee created, and by thee threw down
Th'aſpiring dominations: thou that day

But ſo on man; him through their malice fall'n,
Father of mercie and grace, thou didſt not doome
So ſtrictly, but much more to pity encline:
No ſooner did thy dear and onely ſon
Perceive thee purpos'd not to doom frail man
So ſtrictly, but much more to pity enclin'd,
He to appeaſe thy wrath, and end the ſtrife
Of mercy and juſtice in thy face diſcern'd,
Regardleſs of the bliſs wherein he ſat
Second to thee, offer'd himſelf to die
For man's offence. O unexampl'd love,
Love no where to be found leſs than divine!
Hail ſon of God, ſaviour of men, thy name
Shall be the copious matter of my ſong
Henceforth, and never ſhall my harp thy praiſe
Forget, nor from thy father's praiſe disjoin.
Thus they in heav'n, above the ſtarry ſphere,
Their happie hours in joy and hymning ſpent.
Mean while upon the firm opacous globe
Of this round world, whoſe firſt convex divides
The luminous inferior orbs, enclos'd
From Chaos and th'inroad of darkneſs old,
Satan alighted walks: a globe far off
It ſeem'd, now ſeems a boundleſs continent
Dark, waſte, and wild, under the frown of night
Starleſs expos'd, and ever-threatning ſtorms
Of Chaos bluſtring round, inclement ſkie;
Save on that ſide which from the wall of heav'n
Though diſtant far ſome ſmall reflection gains
Of glimm'ring air leſs vext with tempeſt loud:
Here *walk'd the fiend at large* in ſpacious field.

Of Ganges or Hydaſpes, Indian
But in his way lights on the bar
Of Sericana, where Chineſes dr
With ſails and wind their canie
So on this windie ſea of land,
Walk'd up and down alone bet
Alone, for other creature in th
Living or liveleſs to be found v
None yet, but ſtore hereafter
Up hither like aerial vapours
Of all things tranſitory and v
With vanity had fill'd the wo
Both all things vain, and all
Built their fond hopes of glo
Or happineſs in this or th'o
All who have their reward
Of painful ſuperſtition and
[illegible] but the pra

cal and human kind:
'd ſons and daughters born
ncient world thoſe giants came
ain exploit, though then renown'd:
ext of Babel on the plain
and ſtill with vain deſign
had they wherewithal, would build:
ſingle; he who to be deem'd
d fondly into Ætna flames,
, and he who to enjoy
ſtum, leap'd into the ſea,
us, and many more too long,
and idiots, eremites and friers
lack and grey, with all their trumperie.
grims roam, that ſtray'd ſo far to ſeek
otha him dead, who lives in heav'n;
ey who to be ſure of Paradiſe
put on the weeds of Dominic,
Franciſcan think to paſs diſguis'd;
y paſs the planets ſeven, and paſs the fixt,
d that cryſtalline ſphere whoſe ballance weighs
e trepidation talkt, and that firſt mov'd;
nd now Saint Peter at heav'n's wicket ſeems
To wait them with his keys, and now at foot
Of heav'n's aſcent they lift their feet, when lo
A violent croſs wind from either coaſt
Blows them tranſverſe ten thouſand leagues awry
Into the devious air; then might ye ſee
Cowles, hoods and habits with their wearers toſt
And flutter'd into raggs, then reliques, beads,
Indulgences, diſpences, pardons, bulls,

The ſport of winds: all theſe upwhirl'd aloft
Fly o're the backſide of the world far off
into a Limbo large and broad, ſince call'd
The Paradiſe of fools, to few unknown
Long after, now unpeopl'd, and untrode;
All this dark globe the fiend found as he paſs'd,
And long he wander'd, till at laſt a gleam
Of dawning light turn'd thither-ward in haſte
His travell'd ſteps; far diſtant he deſcries
Aſcending by degrees magnificent
Up to the wall of heav'n a ſtructure high,
At top whereof, but far more rich appear'd
The work as of a kingly palace gate
With frontiſpiece of diamond and gold
Imbelliſht, thick with ſparkling orient gemmes
The portal ſhone, inimitable on earth



The [redacted] by eaſie aſcent, or aggravate
His ſad excluſion from the dores of bliſs.
Direct againſt which op'nd from beneath,
Juſt o're the bliſsful ſeat of Paradiſe,
A paſſage down to th'earth, a paſſage wide,
Wider by far than that of after-times
Over mount Sion, and, though that were large,
Over the Promis'd Land to God ſo dear,
By which, to viſit oft thoſe happy tribes,
On high beheſts his angels to and fro
Paſs'd frequent, and his eye with choice regard
From Paneas the fount of Jordan's flood
To Beerſaba, where the Holy Land
Borders on Ægypt and the Arabian ſhore;
So wide the op'ning ſeem'd, where bounds were ſet
To darkneſs, ſuch as bound the ocean wave.
Satan from hence now on the lower ſtair
That ſcal'd by ſteps of gold to heav'n gate
Looks down with wonder at the ſudden view
Of all this world at once. As when a ſcout
Through dark and deſart ways with peril gone
All night; at laſt by break of chearful dawn
Obtains the brow of ſome high climbing hill,
Which to his eye diſcovers unaware
The goodly proſpect of ſome foreign land
Firſt-ſeen, or ſome renown'd metropolis
With gliſtering ſpires and pinnacles adorn'd,
Which now the riſing ſun guilds with his beams.
Such wonder ſeiz'd, though after heaven ſeen,
The ſpirit maligne, but much more envy ſeiz'd
At ſight of all this world beheld ſo fair.

... of breadth, and without long
Down right into the world's firſt regio
His flight precipitant, and windes with
Through the pure marble air his obliqu
Amongſt innumerable ſtars, that ſhone
Stars diſtant, but nigh hand ſeem'd oth
Or other worlds they ſeem'd, or happy
Like thoſe Heſperian gardens fam'd of
Fortunate fields, and groves and flourie
Thrice happy iſles, but who dwelt happy
He ſtay'd not to enquire; above them a
The golden ſun in ſplendor likeſt heav'n
Allur'd his eye: thither his courſe he be
Through the calm firmament; but up
By centre, or eccentric, hard to tell,
Or longitude, where the great luminarie
Aloof the vulgar conſtellations thick,
That from his lordly eye keep diſtance

ts invifible virtue even to the deep :
ondrouſly was ſet his ſtation bright.
e lands the fiend, a ſpot like which perhaps
nomer in the ſun's lucent orb
ugh his glaz'd optic tube yet never ſaw.
place he found beyond expreſſion bright,
ar'd with aught on earth, metal or ſtone ;
ll parts like, but all alike inform'd
radiant light, as glowing iron with fire ;
tal, part ſeem'd gold, part ſilver clear ;
ne carbuncle moſt or chryſolite,
, or topaz, to the twelve that ſhone
iron's breaſt-plate, and a ſtone beſides
n'd rather oft than elſewhere ſeen,
ſtone, or like to that which here below
ophers in vain ſo long have ſought,
n, though by their powerful art they bind
il Hermes, and call up unbound
ious ſhapes old Proteus from the ſea,
'd through a limbec to his native form.
wonder then if fields and regions here
e forth Elixir pure, and rivers run
e gold, when with one virtuous touch
h-chimic ſun ſo far from us remote
es with terreſtrial humour mixt
n the dark ſo many precious things
our glorious and effect ſo rare ?
natter new to gaze the devil met
l'd, far and wide his eye commands,
ght no obſtacle found here, nor ſhade,
l ſun-ſhine, as when his beams at noon

The same whom jo...
His back was turn'd, but not his bri
Of beaming ſunnie raies, a golden t
Circl'd his head, nor leſs his locks b
Illuſtrious on his ſhoulders fledg'd w
Lay waving round; on ſome great
He ſeem'd, or fixt in cogitation dee
Glad was the ſpirit impure, as nov
To find who might direct his wan
To Paradiſe the happie ſeat of man
His journey's end and our beginnin
But firſt he caſts to change his pro
Which elſe might work him dange
And now a ſtripling cherub he ap
Not of the prime, yet ſuch as in
Youth ſmil'd celeſtial, and to ever
Suitable grace diffus'd, ſo well he
Under a coronet his flowing hair

Th' arch-angel Uriel, one of the ſeven
Who in God's preſence, neareſt to his throne
Stand ready at command, and are his eyes
That run through all the heav'ns, or down to th'earth
Bear his ſwift errands over moiſt and dry,
O'er ſea and land: him Satan thus accoſts.
Uriel, for thou of thoſe ſeven ſpirits that ſtand
In ſight of God's high throne, gloriouſly bright,
The firſt art wont his great authentic will
Interpreter through higheſt heav'n to bring,
Where all his ſons thy embaſſie attend;
And here art likelieſt by ſupream decree
Like honour to obtain, and as his eye
To viſit oft this new creation round;
Unſpeakable deſire to ſee, and know
All theſe his wondrous works, but chiefly man,
His chief delight and favour: him for whom
All theſe his works ſo wondrous he ordain'd,
Hath brought me from the quires of cherubim
Alone thus wandring. Brighteſt ſeraph tell
In which of all theſe ſhining orbs hath man
His fix'd ſeat, or fixed ſeat hath none,
But all theſe ſhining orbs his choice to dwell;
That I may find him, and with ſecret gaze,
Or open admiration him behold
On whom the great Creator hath beſtow'd
Worlds, and on whom hath all theſe graces pour'd:
That both in him and all things, as is meet,
The univerſal Maker we may praiſe;
Who juſtly hath driven out his rebel foes
To deepeſt *hell, and to* repair that loſs

And oft though wisdom wake, suspicion
At wisdom's gate, and to simplicitie
Resigns her charge, while goodness think
Where no ill seems: which now for onc
Uriel, though regent of the sun, and hel
The sharpest-sighted spirit of all in heav
Who to the fraudulent impostor foule
In his uprightness answer thus return'd.
Fair angel, thy desire which tends to kn
The works of God, thereby to glorifie
The great work-maister, leads to no exce
That reaches blame, but rather merits pr
The more it seems excess, that led thee
From thy empyreal mansion thus alone,
To witness with thine eyes what some pe
Contented with report hear only in heav'n
For wonderful indeed are all his works,
Pleasant to know, and worthiest to

a heard his voice, and wild Uproar
i'd, ſtood vaſt infinitude confin'd;
is ſecond bidding darkneſs fled,
on, and order from diſorder ſprung:
their ſeveral quarters haſted then
nbrous elements, earth, flood, air, fire,
is ethereal quinteſſence of heav'n
pward, ſpirited with various forms,
owl'd orbicular, and turn'd to ſtarrs
erieſs, as thou ſeeſt, and how they move;
had his place appointed, each his courſe,
reſt in circuit walles this univerſe.
t downward on that globe whoſe hither ſide
h light from hence, though but reflected, ſhines;
at place is earth the ſeat of man, that light
day, which elſe as th'other hemiſphere
ght would invade, but there the neighbouring moon
call that oppoſite fair ſtarr) her aide
nely interpoſes, and her monthly round
l ending, ſtill renewing through mid heav'n,
th borrow'd light her countenance triform
nce fills and empties to enlighten the earth,
d in her pale dominion checks the night.
at ſpot to which I point is Paradiſe,
am's abode, thoſe loftie ſhades his bowre.
y way thou canſt not miſs, me mine requires.
Thus ſaid, he turn'd, and Satan bowing low,
to ſuperior ſpirits is wont in heav'n,
ere honour due and reverence none neglects,
ok leave, and toward the coaſt of earth beneath
vn from th'ecliptic, ſped with hop'd ſucceſs,

The End of the Third Bo

RADISE LOST.

BOOK IV.

o n that warning voice, which he who ſaw
'h' Apocalyps, heard cry in heaven aloud,
ien the dragon, put to ſecond rout,
ious down to be reveng'd on men,
o the inhabitants on earth!" that now,
ne was, our firſt parents had been warn'd
iing of their ſecret foe, and ſcap'd
ſcap'd his mortal ſnare; for now
ow firſt inflam'd with rage, came down.
pter ere th'accuſer of mankind,
k on innocent frail man his loſs
firſt battle, and his flight to hell:
rejoicing in his ſpeed, though bold,
nd fearleſs, nor with cauſe to boaſt,
s dire attempt, which nigh the birth
ing, boiles in his tumultuous breſt,
: a deviliſh engine back recoiles
nſelf; horror and doubt diſtract
led thoughts, and from the bottom ſtirr
within him, for within him hell
s, and round about him, nor from hell
no more then from himſelf can fly
ge of place: now conſcience wakes deſpair
mber'd, wakes the bitter memorie
: he was, what is, and what muſt be
of worſe deeds worſe ſufferings muſt enſue,

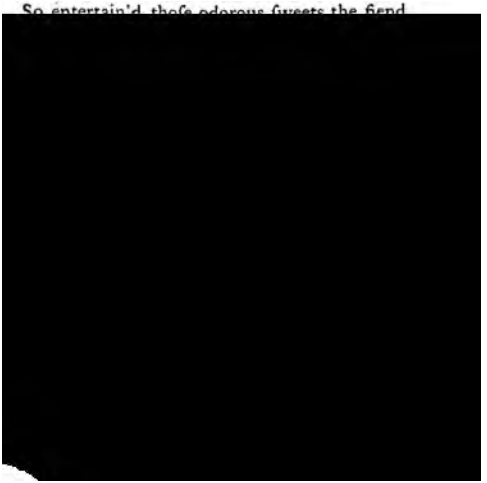
Of this new world; at whose sight all
Hide their diminish't heads; to thee I
But with no friendly voice, and add thy
O sun, to tell thee how I hate thy be
That bring to my remembrance from w
I fell, how glorious once above thy sph
Till pride and worse ambition threw m
Warring in heav'n against heav'n's ma
Ah wherefore! he deserv'd no such ret
From me, whom he created what I w
In that bright eminence, and with his
Upbraided none; nor was his service h
What could be less than to afford him
The easiest recompence, and pay him t
How due! yet all his good prov'd ill in
And wrought but malice; lifted up so
I sdein'd subjection, and thought one s

id his powerful deſtiny ordain'd
ome inferior angel, I had ſtood
happie; no unbounded hope had rais'd
ition. Yet why not? ſome other power
reat might have aſpir'd, and me though mean
n to his part; but other powers as great
ot, but ſtand unſhak'n, from within
om without, to all temptations arm'd.
t thou the ſame free will and power to ſtand?
hadſt: whom haſt thou then or what to accuſe,
eav'n's free love dealt equally to all?
en his love accurſt, ſince love or hate,
e alike, it deals eternal woe.
curs'd be thou; ſince againſt his thy will
freely what it now ſo juſtly rues.
iſerable! which way ſhall I flie
ite wrath, and infinite deſpaire?
h way I flie is hell; myſelf am hell;
in the loweſt deep a lower deep
hreatning to devour me opens wide,
hich the hell I ſuffer ſeems a heav'n.
n at laſt relent: is there no place
for repentance, none for pardon left?
left but by ſubmiſſion; and that word
in forbids me, and my dread of ſhame
ng the ſpirits beneath, whom I ſeduc'd
other promiſes and other vaunts
to ſubmit, boaſting I could ſubdue
mnipotent. Ay me, they little know
dearly I abide that boaſt ſo vain,
what *torments inwardly* I groane:

But lay, a
By act of grace my former
Would highth recal high thoughts,
What feign'd submission swore ;
Vows made in pain, as violent
For never can true reconcilement
Where wounds of deadly hate
Which would but lead me to a
And heavier fall : so should I
Short intermission bought with
This knows my punisher ; the
From granting he, as I from
All hope excluded thus, behold
Of us out-cast, exil'd, his
Mankind created, and for
So farewel hope, and with
Farewel remorse : all good
Evil be thou my good ; by

th'd with outward calme,
was the firſt
under faintly ſhew,
e, couch't with revenge:
raftis'd to deceive
whoſe eye purſu'd him down
id on th' Aſſyrian mount
more than could befall
: his geſtures fierce
d demeanour, then alone,
unobſerv'd, unſeen.
id to the border comes
delicious Paradiſe,
wns with her incloſure green,
mound the champain head
rneſs, whoſe hairie ſides
ergrown, groteſque and wilde,
and overhead up grew
ghth of loftieſt ſhade,
ne, and firr, and branching palm,
e, and as the ranks aſcend
ſhade, a woodie theatre
iew. Yet higher than their tops
ous wall of Paradiſe up ſprung:
ur general ſire gave proſpect large
ather empire neighbouring round.
r then that wall a circling row
eſt trees loaden with faireſt fruit,
and fruits at once of golden hue
d, with gay enammel'd colours mixt:
ch the ſun more glad impreſs'd his be

Than in fair evening cloud, or humid bow,
When God had ſhowr'd the earth; ſo lovely ſeem'd
That lantſkip: and of pure now purer air
Meets his approach, and to the heart inſpires
Vernal delight and joy, able to drive
All ſadneſs but deſpair: now gentle gales
Fanning their odoriferous wings diſpenſe
Native perfumes, and whiſper whence they ſtole
Thoſe balmie ſpoiles. As when to them who ſaile
Beyound the Cape of Hope, and now are paſt
Mozambic, off at ſea north-eaſt winds blow
Sabean odours from the ſpicie ſhoare
Of Arabia the bleſt, with ſuch delay
Well pleas'd they ſlack their courſe, and many a leagu
Chear'd with the grateful ſmell old Ocean ſmiles.
So entertain'd thoſe odorous ſweets the fiend



or higheſt wall, and ſheer within
on his feet. As when a prowling wolf,
hunger drives to ſeek new haunts for prey,
ig where ſhepherds pen their flocks at eeve
l'd cotes amid the field ſecure,
're the fence with eaſe into the fould:
thief bent to unhoord the caſh
e rich burgher, whoſe ſubſtantial dores,
arr'd and bolted faſt, fear no aſſault,
ie window climbes, or o're the tiles;
ib this firſt grand thief into God's fould:
: into his church lewd hirelings climbe.
up he flew, and on the tree of life,
iddle tree and higheſt there that grew,
: a cormorant; yet not true life
y regain'd, but ſat deviſing death
m who liv'd; nor on the virtue thought
t life-giving plant, but only us'd
ɔſpect, what well us'd had been the pledge
nortalitie. So little knows
ɔut God alone, to value right
ɔod before him, but perverts beſt things
rſt abuſe, or to their meaneſt uſe.
h him with new wonder now he views
delight of human ſenſe expos'd
ow room nature's whole wealth, yea more,
v'n on earth: for bliſsful Paradiſe
ɔd the garden was, by him in the eaſt
len planted; Eden ſtretch'd her line
Auran eaſtward to the royal towrs
reat *Seleucia, built* by Grecian kings,

Of vegetable gold; and next to life
Our death the tree of knowledge grew
Knowledge of good bought dear by kno
Southward through Eden went a river
Nor chang'd his courſe, but through th
Paſs'd underneath ingulft, for God had
That mountain as his garden mould hig
Upon the rapid current, which through
Of porous earth with kindly thirſt upd
Roſe a freſh fountain, and with many a
Water'd the garden; thence united fell
Down the ſteep glade, and met the nea
Which from his darkſome paſſage now a
And now divided into four main ſtream
Runs divers, wandring many a famous
And country whereof here needs no acc
But rather to tell how, if art could tell

where the morning ſun firſt warmly ſmote
pen field, and where the unpierc't ſhade
rown'd the noontide bowrs: thus was this place
ppy rural ſeat of various view;
cawhoſe rich trees wept odorous gumms and balme,
rs whoſe fruit burniſht with golden rinde
g amiable, Heſperian fables true,
rue, here only, and of delicious taſte:
wixt them lawns, and level downs, and flocks
afing the tender herb, were interpos'd,
palmie hilloc, or the flourie lap
f ſome irriguous valley ſpread her ſtore,
lours of all hue, and without thorn the roſe:
nother ſide, umbrageous grots and caves
Of cool receſs, o're which the mantling vine
Lays forth her purple grape, and gently creeps
Luxuriant; mean while murmuring waters fall
Down the ſlope hills, diſperſt, or in a lake,
That to the fringed bank with myrtle crown'd,
Her chryſtall mirror holds, unite their ſtreams.
The birds their quire apply; aires, vernal aires,
Breathing the ſmell of field and grove, attune
The trembling leaves, while univerſal Pan
Knit with the Graces and the Hours in dance
Led on th'eternal ſpring. Not that fair field
Of Enna, where Proſerpin gath'ring flours
Herſelf a fairer flour by gloomie Dis
Was gather'd, which coſt Ceres all that pain
To ſeek her through the world; nor that ſweet g
Of Daphne by Orontes, and th'inſpir'd
Caſtalian ſpring might with his Paradiſe

Mount Amara, though [illegible]
True Paradiſe under the Ethiop line
By Nilus head, enclos'd with ſhinin
A whole day's journey high, but w
From this Aſſyrian garden, where
Saw undelighted all delight, all kin
Of living creatures new to fight an
Two of far nobler ſhape erect and
Godlike erect, with native honour
In naked majeſty ſeem'd lords of a
And worthie ſeem'd, for in their l
The image of their glorious Make
Truth, wiſdom, ſanctitude ſevere
Severe, but in true filial freedom
Whence true autoritie in men; th
Not equal, as their ſex not equal
For contemplation he and valour
For ſoftneſs ſhe and ſweet attracti

iſhevel'd, but in wanton ringlets wav'd
s the vine curles her tendrils, which impli'd
ubjection, but requir'd with gentle ſway,
nd by her yielded, by him beſt receiv'd,
ielded with coy ſubmiſſion, modeſt pride,
nd ſweet reluctant amorous delay.
or thoſe myſterious parts were then conceal'd,
hen was not guiltie ſhame, diſhoneſt ſhame
f nature's works, honour diſhonourable,
n-bred, how have ye troubl'd all mankind
/ith ſhews inſtead, mere ſhews of ſeeming pure,
nd baniſht from man's life his happieſt life,
nplicitie and ſpotleſs innocence.
o paſs'd they naked on, nor ſhun'd the ſight
f God or angel, for they thought no ill:
o hand in hand they paſs'd, the lovelieſt pair
hat ever ſince in love's imbraces met,
dam the goodlieſt man of men ſince born
is ſons, the faireſt of her daughters Eve.
nder a tuft of ſhade that on a green
ood whiſpering ſoft, by a freſh fountain ſide
hey ſat them down, and after no more toil
f their ſweet gard'ning labour then ſuffic'd
o recommend cool zephyr, and made eaſe
ore eaſie, wholſome thirſt and appetite
ore grateful, to their ſupper fruits they fell,
ectarine fruits which the compliant boughes
ielded them, ſide-long as they ſat reclin'd
n the ſoft downie bank damaſkt with flours:
he ſavourie pulp they chew, and in the rinde
ill as they thirſted ſcoop the brimming ſtream;

imbol'd before them; th'unwieldy elephant
make them mirth us'd all his might, and wreath
s lithe proboſcis; cloſe the ſerpent fly
finuating, wove with Gordian twine
s breaded train, and of his fatal guile
ave proof unheeded; others on the graſs
ucht, and now fill'd with paſture gazing ſat,
r bedward ruminating: for the ſun
eclin'd was haſting now with prone career
o th'ocean iſles, and in the aſcending ſcale
f heav'n the ſtarrs that uſher evening roſe:
Then Satan ſtill in gaze, as firſt he ſtood,
carce thus at length fail'd ſpeech recover'd ſad.
O hell! what do mine eyes with grief behold,
nto our room of bliſs thus high advanc't
reatures of other mould, earth-born perhaps,
Not ſpirits, yet to heav'nly ſpirits bright
little infe[illegible] nue

'ill vaniſh and deliver ye to woe,
'ore woe, the more your taſte is now of joy;
appie, but for ſo happie ill ſecur'd
›ng to continue, and this high ſeat your heav'n
fenc't for heav'n to keep out ſuch a foe
; now is enter'd; yet no purpos'd foe
› you whom I could pitie thus forlorn
hough I unpitied: league with you I ſeek,
nd mutual amitie ſo ſtreight, ſo cloſe,
hat I with you muſt dwell, or you with me
nceforth; my dwelling haply may not pleaſe
ke this fair Paradiſe, your ſenſe, yet ſuch
:cept your maker's work; he gave it me,
hich I as freely give; hell ſhall unfold,
› entertain you two, her wideſt gates,
nd ſend forth all her kings; there will be roome,
›t like theſe narrow limits, to receive
›ur numerous offspring; if no better place,
hank him who puts me loath to this revenge
n you who wrong me not for him who wrong'd.
nd ſhould I at your harmleſs innocence
elt, as I doe, yet public reaſon juſt,
›nour and empire with revenge enlarg'd,
conquering this new world, compells me now
› do what elſe though damn'd I ſhould abhorr.
ſpake the fiend, and with neceſſitie,
ne tyrants plea, excus'd his deviliſh deeds.
nen from his loftie ſtand on that high tree
›wn he alights among the ſportful herd
thoſe fourfooted kindes, himſelf now one,
›w other, as their ſhape ſerv'd beſt his end

Nearer to view his prey, and unespi'd
To mark what of their state he more might learn
By word or action markt: about them round
A lion now he stalkes with fierie glare,
Then as a tiger, who by chance hath spi'd
In some purlieu two gentle fawns at play,
Strait couches close, then rising changes oft
His couchant watch, as one who chose his ground
Whence rushing he might surest seise them both
Grip't in each paw: when Adam first of men
To first of women Eve thus moving speech,
Turn'd him all ear to hear new utterance flow.

Sole partner and sole part of all these joyes,
Dearer thyself then all; needs must the power
That made us, and for us this ample world
Be infinitely good, and of his good
As liberal and free as infinite,
That rais'd us from the dust and plac't us here

upon us, and dominion giv'n
her creatures that poſſeſs
and ſea. Then let us not think hard
rohibition, who enjoy
ſo large to all things elſe, and choice
of manifold delights:
ver praiſe him, and extoll
, following our delightful taſk
heſe growing plants, and tend theſe flours,
e it toilſome, yet with thee were ſweet.
thus Eve repli'd. O thou for whom
whom I was form'd fleſh of thy fleſh,
ut whom am to no end, my guide
what thou haſt ſaid is juſt and right.
him indeed all praiſes owe,
hanks, I chiefly who enjoy
appier lot, enjoying thee
by ſo much odds, while thou
to thyſelf canſt no where find.
oft remember, when from ſleep
't, and found myſelf repos'd
ade on flours, much wondring where
I was, whence thither brought, and how;
far from thence a murmuring ſound
iſſu'd from a cave and ſpread
d plain, then ſtood unmov'd
expanſe of heav'n; I thither went
periene't thought, and laid me down
en bank, to look into the cleer
e, that to me ſeem'd another ſkie.
lowr to look, juſt oppoſite,

what there thou ſeeſt, fair creature, is t
With thee it came and goes: but follow
And I will bring thee where no ſhadow ſt
Thy coming, and thy ſoft embraces, he
Whoſe image thou art, him thou ſhalt en
Inſeparably thine to him ſhall beare
Multitudes like thyſelf, and thence be call
Mother of human race: what could I doe
But follow ſtrait, inviſibly thus led?
Till I eſpi'd thee, fair indeed and tall,
Under a platan, yet methought leſs fair,
Leſs winning ſoft, leſs amiablie milde,
Then that ſmooth watry image: back I tur
Thou following cry'dſt aloud, Return fair E
Whom fli'ſt thou? whom thou fli'ſt, of hi
His fleſh, his bone; to give thee being I lea
Out of my ſide to thee, nearеſt my heart
Subſtantial life

ike our general mother, and with eyes
njugal attraction unreprov'd,
meek ſurrender, half imbracing leand
ur firſt father, half her ſwelling breaſt
ed met his under the flowing gold
her looſe treſſes hid: he in delight
th of her beauty and ſubmiſſive charms
il'd with ſuperior love, as Jupiter
n Juno ſmiles, when he impregns the clouds
hat ſhed May flowers; and preſs'd her matron lip
With kiſſes pure: aſide the devil turn'd
For envie, yet with jealous leer maligne
Ey'd them aſkance, and to himſelf thus plain'd.

Sight hateful, ſight tormenting! thus theſe two
Imparadis't in one another's arms
The happier Eden, ſhall enjoy their fill
Of bliſs on bliſs, while I to hell am thruſt,
Where neither joy nor love, but fierce deſire,
Among our other torments not the leaſt,
Still unfulfill'd with pain of longing pines;
Yet let me not forget what I have gain'd
From their own mouths; all is not theirs it ſeems:
One fatal tree there ſtands of knowledge call'd,
Forbidden them to taſte: knowledge forbidd'n?
Suſpicious, reaſonleſs. Why ſhould their lord
Envie them that? can it be ſin to know,
Can it be death? and do they only ſtand
By ignorance, is that their happie ſtate,
The proof of their obedience and their faith?
O fair foundation laid whereon to build
Their ruine! hence I will excite their minds

With more deſire to know, and to reject
Envious commands, invented with deſign
To keep them low whom knowledge might exalt
Equal with Gods; aſpiring to be ſuch,
They taſte and die: what likelier can enſue?
But firſt with narrow ſearch I muſt walk round
This garden, and no corner leave unſpi'd;
A chance but chance may lead where I may meet
Some wandring ſpirit of heav'n, by fountain ſide,
Or in thick ſhade retir'd, from him to draw
What further would be learnt. Live while ye may,
Yet happie pair; enjoy, till I return,
Short pleaſures, for long woes are to ſucceed.
So ſaying, his proud ſtep he ſcornful turn'd,
But with ſly circumſpection, and began (roam.
Through wood, through waſte, o'er hill, o'er dale his

flung high with diamond flaming, and with gold
Thither came Uriel, gliding through the even
On a sun beam, swift as a shooting star
In autumn thwarts the night, when vapours fir'd
Impress the air, and shews the mariner
From what point of his compass to beware
Impetuous winds: he thus began in haste.

Gabriel, to thee thy course by lot hath giv'n
Charge and strict watch that to this happie place
No evil thing approach or enter in;
This day at highth of noon came to my sphere
A spirit, zealous, as he seem'd, to know
More of th'Almighty's works, and chiefly man
God's latest image: I describ'd his way
Bent all on speed, and marke his aerie gate;
But in the mount that lies from Eden north,
Where he first lighted, soon discern'd his looks
Alien from heav'n, with passions foul obscur'd:
Mine eye pursu'd him still, but under shade
Lost sight of him; one of the banisht crew
I fear, hath ventur'd from the deep, to raise
New troubles; him thy care must be to find.
To whom the winged warriour thus return'd:
Uriel, no wonder if thy perfect sight,
Amid the sun's bright circle where thou sitst,
See far and wide: in at this gate none pass
The vigilance here plac't, but such as come
Well known from heav'n; and since meridian hour
No creature thence: if spirit of other sort,
So minded, have ore-leapt these earthie bounds
On purpose, hard thou knowst it to exclude

Beneath th'Azores ; whither the prime o
Incredible how ſwift, had thither rowl'd
Diurnal, or this leſs volubil earth
By ſhorter flight to th'eaſt, had left him
Arraying with reflected purple and gold
The clouds that on his weſtern throne att
Now came ſtill ev'ning on, and twilight g
Had in her ſober livorie all things clad ;
Silence accompanied, for beaſt and bird,
They to their graſſie couch, theſe to their
Were ſlunk, all but the wakeful nightingal
She all night long her am'rous deſcant ſung
Silence was pleas'd : now glow'd the firma
With living ſapphires : Heſperus that led
The ſtarrie hoſt, rode brighteſt, till the mo
Riſing in clouded majeſtie, at length
Apparent queen unvail'd her peerleſs light,
And o're the dark her ſ

e-lids: other creatures all day long
dle unimploy'd, and leſs need reſt;
hath his daily work of body or mind
inted, which declares his dignitie,
the regard of heav'n on all his waies;
le other animals unactive range,
l of their doings God takes no account.
morrow ere freſh morning ſtreak the eaſt
th firſt approach of light, we muſt be ris'n,
d at our pleaſant labour, to reform
on flourie arbors, yonder allies green,
ur walks at noon, with branches overgrown,
hat mock our ſcant manuring, and require
More hands than ours to lop their wanton growth:
Thoſe bloſſoms alſo, and thoſe dropping gummes,
That lie beſtrowne unſightly and unſmooth,
Aſk riddance, if we mean to tread with eaſe;
Mean while, as nature wills, night bids us reſt.
To whom thus Eve with perfect beauty adorn'd.
My author and diſpoſer, what thou bidſt
Unargu'd I obey; ſo God ordains,
God is thy law, thou mine: to know no more
Is woman's happieſt knowledge and her praiſe.
With thee converſing I forget all time,
All ſeaſons and their change, all pleaſe alike.
Sweet is the breath of morn, her riſing ſweet,
With charm of earlieſt birds; pleaſant the ſun
When firſt on this delightful land he ſpreads
His orient beams, on herb, tree, fruit, and flo
Gliſtring with dew; fragrant the fertil earth
After ſoft ſhowers; and ſweet the coming of

Of grateful ev'ning milde, then ſilent night
With this her ſolemn bird and this fair moon,
And theſe the gemms of heav'n, her ſtarrie train:
But neither breath of morn when ſhe aſcends
With charm of earlieſt birds, nor riſing ſun
On this delightful land, nor herb, fruit, floure,
Gliſtring with dew, nor fragrance after ſhowers,
Nor grateful evening mild, nor ſilent night
With this her ſolemn bird, nor walk by moon,
Or glittering ſtar-light without thee is ſweet.
But wherefore all night long ſhine theſe, for whom
This glorious ſight, when ſleep hath ſhut all eyes?
To whom our general anceſtor repli'd.
Daughter of God and man, accompliſht Eve,
Thoſe have their courſe to finiſh, round the earth,
By morrow ev'ning, and from land to land
In order, though to nations yet unborn,
Miniſtring light prepar'd, they ſet and riſe;

), both when we wake, and when we ſleep:
ıeſe with ceaſleſs praiſe his work behold
day and night: how often from the ſteep
choing hill or thicket have we heard
ſtial voices to the midnight air,
, or reſponſive each to others note
ging their great Creator: oft in bands
hile they keep watch, or nightly rounding walk
/ith heav'nly touch of inſtrumental ſounds
o full harmonic number join'd, their ſongs
ivide the night, and lift our thoughts to heaven.
Thus talking hand in hand alone they paſs'd
On to their bliſsful bower; it was a place
Chos'n by the ſovran planter, when he fram'd
All things to man's delightful uſe; the roof
Of thickeſt covert was inwoven ſhade
Laurel and mirtle, and what higher grew
Of firm and fragrant leaf; on either ſide
Acanthus, and each odorous bushie ſhrub
Fenc'd up the verdant wall; each beauteous flour,
Iris all hues, roſes, and geſſamin
Rear'd high their flouriſht heads between, and wrou
Moſaic; underfoot the violet,
Crocus, and hyacinth with rich inlay
Broider'd the ground, more colour'd then with ſton
Of coſtlieſt emblem: other creature here
Beaſt, bird, inſect, or worm durſt enter none;
Such was their awe of man. In ſhadier bower
More ſacred and ſequeſter'd, though but feign'd
Pan or Silvanus never ſlept, nor nymph,
Nor Faunus haunted. Here in cloſe receſs

Endow'd with all their gifts, and O too like
In ſad event, when to the unwiſer ſon
Of Japhet brought by Hermes, ſhe enſnar'd
Mankind with her fair looks, to be aveng'd
On him who had ſtole Jove's authentic fire.
Thus at their ſhadie lodge arriv'd, both ſtood,
loth turn'd, and under op'n ſkie ador'd
he God that made both ſkie, air, earth and he
Vhich they beheld, the moon's reſplendent globe
nd ſtarrie pole: thou alſo mad'ſt the night,
aker omnipotent, and thou the day,
Vhich we in our appointed work imploy'd
ave finiſht happie in our mutual help
id mutual love, the crown of all our bliſs
dain'd by thee, and this delicious place
r us too large, where thy abundance wants
takers, and uncropt falls to the ground.
: thou h

rou bleſome diſguiſes which we wear,
ide by ſide were laid, nor turn'd I weene
from his fair ſpouſe, nor Eve the rites
ious of connubial love refus'd:
rer hypocrites auſterely talk
itie and place and innocence,
ng as impure what God declares
and commands to ſome, leaves free to all.
aker bids encreaſe, who bids abſtain
ır deſtroyer foe to God and man?
veded love, myſterious law, true ſource
man offspring, ſole proprietie,
adiſe of all things common elſe.
e adulterous Luſt was driven from men
g the beſtial herds to range, by thee
ed in reaſon, loyal, juſt, and pure,
ons dear, and all the charities
her, ſon, and brother firſt were known.
it, that I ſhould write thee ſin or blame,
nk thee unbefitting holieſt place,
ual fountain of domeſtic ſweets,
: bed is undefil'd and chaſte pronounc't,
t, or paſt, as ſaints and patriarchs us'd.
love his golden ſhafts implies, here lights
nſtant lamp, and waves his purple wings,
s here and revels; not in the bought ſmile
rlots, loveleſs, joyleſs, unindear'd,
fruition, nor in court amours
dance, or wanton maſk, or midnight ball,
enate, which the ſtarv'd lover ſings
s *proud fair*, beſt quitted with diſdain.

Theſe lull'd by nightingales imbracing ſlept,
And on their naked limbs the flourie roof
Shower'd roſes, which the morn repair'd. Sleep on,
Bleſt pair; and O yet happieſt if ye ſeek
No happier ſtate, and know to know no more.
Now had night meaſur'd with her ſhaddowie cone
Half way up hill this vaſt ſublunar vault,
And from their ivorie port the cherubim
Forth iſſuing at the accuſtom'd hour ſtood arm'd
To their night watches in warlike parade,
When Gabriel to his next in power thus ſpake.
Uzziel, half theſe draw off, and coaſt the ſouth
With ſtricteſt watch; theſe other wheel the north,
Our circuit meets full weſt. As flame they part
Half wheeling to the ſhield, half to the ſpear.

The organs of her fancie, and with them forge
Illuſions as he liſt, phantaſms and dreams,
Or if, inſpiring venom, he might taint
Th'animal ſpirits that from pure blood ariſe
Like gentle breath from rivers pure, thence raiſe
At leaſt diſtemper'd, diſcontented thoughts,
Vain hopes, vain aimes, inordinate deſires
Blown up with high conceits ingendring pride.
Him thus intent Ithuriel with his ſpear
Touch'd lightly; for no falſhood can endure
Touch of celeſtial temper, but returns
Of force to its own likeneſs: up he ſtarts
Diſcover'd and ſurpriz'd. As when a ſpark
Lights on a heap of nitrous powder, laid
Fit for the tun ſome magazine to ſtore
Againſt a rumour'd war, the ſmuttie graine
With ſudden blaze diffus'd, inflames the air:
So ſtarted up in his own ſhape the fiend.
Back ſtept thoſe two fair angels half amaz'd
So ſudden to behold the grieſlie king;
Yet thus, unmov'd with fear, accoſt him ſoon.
Which of thoſe rebel ſpirits adjudg'd to hell
Com'ſt thou, eſcap'd thy priſon, and transform'd,
Why ſatſt thou like an enemie in waite
Here watching at the head of theſe that ſleep?
Know ye not then, ſaid Satan, fill'd with ſcorn,
Know ye not me? ye knew me once no mate
For you, there ſitting where ye durſt not ſoare;
Not to know me argues yourſelves unknown,
The loweſt of your throng; or if ye know,
Why aſk ye, and ſuperfluous begin

Thy ſin and place of doom obſcure and
But come, for thou, beſure, ſhalt give ac
To him who ſent us, whoſe charge is to
This place inviolable, and theſe from hart
So ſpake the cherube, and his grave rebu
Severe in youthful beautie, added grace
Invincible: abaſht the devil ſtood,
And felt how awful goodneſs is, and ſaw
Virtue in her ſhape how lovely, ſaw, and
His loſs; but chiefly to find here obſerv'd
His luſtre viſibly impair'd; yet ſeem'd
Undaunted. If I muſt contend, ſaid he,
Beſt with the beſt, the ſender not the ſent,
Or all at once; more glory will be won,
Or leſs be loſt. Thy fear, ſaid Zephon bol
Will ſave us trial what the leaſt can do
Single againſt thee wicked, and thence weal

xt command. To whom their chief
i the front thus call'd aloud.
hear the tread of nimble feet
way, and now by glimps diſcern
Zephon through the ſhade,
em comes a third of regal port,
lendor wan ; who by his gate
lemeanour ſeems the prince of hell,
o part hence without conteſt ;
for in his look defiance lours.
had ended, when thoſe two approach'd
lated whom they brought, where found,
, in what form and poſture coucht.
ith ſtern regard thus Gabriel ſpake.
ou, Satan, broke the bounds preſcrib'd
greſſions, and diſturb'd the charge
who approve not to tranſgreſs
ple, but have power and right
thy bold entrance on this place ;
ſeems to violate ſleep, and thoſe
ling God hath planted here in bliſs ?
hus Satan with contemptuous brow.
ou had'ſt in heav'n th'eſteem of wiſe,
held thee ; but this queſtion aſkt
doubt. Lives there who loves his pain ?
not, finding way, break looſe from hell,
her doom'd ? thou wouldſt thyſelf, no doubt,
venture to whatever place
n pain, where thou mightſt hope to change
ith eaſe, and ſooneſt recompence
elight, which in this place I ſought ;

Thus he in ſcorn. The warlike angel mo
Diſdainfully half ſmiling thus repli'd:
O loſs of one in heav'n to judge of wiſe,
Since Satan fell, whom follie overthrew,
And now returns him from his priſon ſcapt,
Gravely in doubt whether to hold them wiſe
Or not, who aſk what boldneſs brought him
Inlicenc't from his bounds in hell preſcrib'd;
So wiſe he judges it to fly from pain
However, and to ſcape his punishment.
So judge thou ſtill, preſumptuous, till the wr
Which thou incurr'ſt by flying, meet thy flig
Tenfold, and ſcourge that wiſdom back to h
Which taught thee yet no better, that no pair
Can equal anger infinite provok't.
But wherefore thou alone? wherefore with th
Came not all hell broke looſe? is pain to them
Leſs pain, leſs to be fled, or thou than

ngel, well thou knowſt I ſtood
eft, when in battle to thy aid
ſting volied thunder made all ſpeed
onded thy elſe not dreaded ſpear.
l thy words at random, as before,
thy inexperience what behoves
hard affaies and ill ſucceſſes paſt
thful leader, not to hazard all
ough ways of danger by himſelf untri'd.
erefore, I alone firſt undertook
wing the deſolate abyſs, and ſpie
his new created world, whereof in hell
ame is not ſilent, here in hope to find
Better abode, and my afflicted powers
To ſettle here on earth, or in mid aire;
Though for poſſeſſion put to try once more
What thou and thy gay legions dare againſt;
Whoſe eaſier buſineſs were to ſerve their lord
High up in heav'n, with ſongs to hymne his throne
And practis'd diſtances to cringe, not fight.
To whom the warriour angel ſoon repli'd.
To ſay and ſtrait unſay, pretending firſt
Wiſe to flie pain, profeſſing next the ſpie,
Argues no leader, but a lyar trac't,
Satan, and couldſt thou faithful add? O name,
O ſacred name of faithfulneſs profan'd!
Faithful to whom? to thy rebellious crew?
Armie of fiends, fit body to fit head;
Was this your diſcipline and faith ingag'd,
Your military obedience, to diſſolve
Allegiance to the acknowledg'd power ſupr

And thou fly hypocrite, who now wouldſt ſeem
Patron of liberty, who more than thou
Once fawn'd, and cring'd: and ſervilly ador'd
Heav'n's awful monarch? wherefore but in hope
To diſpoſſeſs him, and thyſelf to reigne?
But mark what I arreede thee now, avaunt;
Flie thither whence thou fledſt: if from this houre
Within theſe hallow'd limits thou appeer,
Back to th'infernal pit I drag thee chain'd,
And ſeale thee ſo, as henceforth not to ſcorne
The facil gates of hell too ſlightly barr'd.
So threatn'd he, but Satan to no threats
Gave heed, but waxing more in rage repli'd.
Then when I am thy captive talk of chains,
Proud limitarie cherube but ere then
Far heavier load thyſelf expect to feel
From my prevailing arm, though heaven's king
Ride on thy wings, and thou with thy compeers,

His ſtature reacht the ſkie, and on his creſt
Sat horror plum'd; nor wanted in his graſpe
What ſeem'd both ſpear and ſhield: now dreadful deeds
Might have enſu'd, nor onely Paradiſe
In this commotion, but the ſtarrie cope
Of heav'n perhaps, or all the elements
At leaſt had gone to rack, diſturb'd and torn
With violence of this conflict, had not ſoon
Th'Eternal to prevent ſuch horrid fray
Hung forth in heav'n his golden ſcales, yet ſeen
Betwixt Aſtrea and the Scorpion ſign,
Wherein all things created firſt he weigh'd,
The pendulous round earth with ballanc't aire
In counterpoiſe, now ponders all events,
Battles and realms: in theſe he put two weights,
The ſequel each of parting and of fight;
The latter quick up flew, and kickt the beam;
Which Gabriel ſpying, thus beſpake the fiend.

Satan, I know thy ſtrength, and thou knowſt mine,
Neither our own but giv'n; what follie then
To boaſt what arms can do, ſince thine no more
Then heav'n permits, nor mine, though doubl'd now
To trample thee as mire: for proof look up,
And read thy lot in yon celeſtial ſign
Where thou art weigh'd, and ſhown how light, how weak,
If thou reſiſt. The fiend lookt up and knew
His mounted ſcale aloft: nor more; but fled
Murmuring, and with him fled the ſhades of night.

The End of the Fourth Book.

was aerie light, from pure digeſtion bred,
And temperat vapours bland, which th' o
Of leaves and fuming rills, Aurora's fan,
Lightly diſpers'd, and the ſhrill matin ſong
Of birds on every bough ; ſo much the mo
His wonder was to find unwak'nd Eve
With treſſes diſcompos'd, and glowing cheel
As through unquiet reſt : he on his ſide
Leaning half rais'd, with looks of cordial lo
Hung over her enamour'd, and beheld
Beautie, which whether waking or aſleep,
Shot forth peculiar graces ; then with voice
Milde, as when Zephyrus on Flora breathes,
Her hand ſoft touching, whiſper'd thus. Aw
My faireſt, my eſpous'd, my lateſt found,
Heav'n's laſt beſt gift, my ever new delight,
Awake, the morning ſhines, and the freſh f
alls us, we loſe the

O ſole in whom my thoughts find all repoſe,
My glorie, my perfection, glad I ſee
Thy face, and morn return'd, for I this night
Such night till this I never paſs'd, have drea
If dream'd, not as I oft am wont, of thee,
Works of day paſt, or morrow's next deſign,
But of offence and trouble, which my mind
Knew never till this irkſome night; methou
Cloſe at mine ear one call'd me forth to wa
With gentle voice, I thought it thine; it ſaid,
Why ſleepſt thou Eve? now is the pleaſant t
The cool, the ſilent, ſave where ſilence yield
To the night-warbling bird, that now awake
Tunes ſweeteſt his love-labor'd ſong; now r
Full orb'd the moon, and with more pleaſin
Shadowie ſets off the face of things; in vain,
If none regard; Heav'n wakes with all his e
Whom to behold but thee, nature's deſire,
In whoſe ſight all things joy, with ravishmen
Attracted by thy beauty ſtill to gaze.
I roſe as at thy call, but found thee not;
To find thee I directed then my walk;
And on, methought, alone I paſs'd through
That brought me on a ſudden to the tree
Of interdicted knowledge: fair it ſeem'd,
Much fairer to my fancie then by day:
And as I wondring lookt, beſide it ſtood
One ſhap'd and wing'd like one of thoſe fro
By us oft ſeen; his dewie locks diſtill'd
Ambroſia; on that tree he alſo gaz'd;
And O fair plant, ſaid he, with fruit ſurcha

At ſuch bold words vouch
But he thus overjoy'd, o fruit divine,
Sweet of thyſelf but much more ſweet th
Forbidd'n here, it ſeems, as onely fit
For Gods, yet able to make Gods of me
And why not Gods of men, ſince good,
Communicated, more abundunt growes,
The author not impair'd, but honour'd r
Here, happie creature, fair angelic Eve,
Partake thou alſo; happie though thou a
Happier thou mayſt be, worthier canſt
Taſte this, and be henceforth among th
Thyſelf a goddeſs, not to earth confin'd
But ſometimes in the air, as we, ſom
Aſcend to heav'n, by merit thine, and t
What life the gods live there, and ſuch
So ſaying, he drew nigh, and to me he
To my mouth of that ſame fruit

To this high exaltation; suddenly
My guide was gone, and I, methought, sunk down,
And fell asleep; but o how glad I wak'd
To find this but a dream! Thus Eve her night
Related, and thus Adam answer'd sad.

Best image of myself and dearer half,
The trouble of thy thoughts this night in sleep
Affects me equally; nor can I like
This uncouth dream, of evil sprung I fear;
Yet evil whence? in thee can harbour none,
Created pure. But know that in the soul
Are many lesser faculties that serve
Reason as chief; among these fancie next
Her office holds of all external things,
Which the five watchful senses represent,
She forms imaginations, aerie shapes,
Which reason joining or disjoining, frames
All what we affirm or what deny, and call
Our knowledge or opinion; then retires
Into her private cell when nature rests.
Oft in her absence mimic fancie wakes
To imitate her; but misjoining shapes,
Wilde work produces oft, and most in dreams,
Ill matching words and deeds long past or late.
Some such resemblances methinks I find
Of our last ev'ning's talk, in this thy dream,
But with addition strange; yet be not sad.
Evil into the mind of God or man
May come and go, so unapprov'd, and leave
No spot or blame behind: which gives me hope
That what in sleep thou didst abhor to dream,

Waking thou never wilt consent to do.
Be not disheart'n'd then, nor cloud those looks
That wont to be more chearful and serene
Than when fair morning first smiles on the world
And let us to our fresh imployments rise
Among the groves, the fountains and the flours
That open now their choicest bosom'd smells
Reserv'd from night, and kept for thee in store.
So chear'd he his fair spouse; and she was chear'd
But silently a gentle tear let fall
From either eye, and wip'd them with her hair;
Two other precious drops that ready stood,
Each in their chrystal sluice, he ere they fell
Kiss'd as the gracious signs of sweet remorse
And pious awe, that fear'd to have offended.
So all was clear'd, and to the field they haste.
But first from under shadie arborous roof,
Soon as they forth were come to open sight
Of day-spring, and the sun, who scarce up risen
With wheels yet hov'ring o're the ocean brim,
Shot parallel to the earth his dewie ray,
Discovering in wide lantskip all the east

To add more ſweetneſs, and they thus began.
These are thy glorious works, parent of good,
Almightie, thine this univerſal frame,
Thus wondrous fair; thyſelf how wondrous then!
Unſpeakable, who ſitſt above these heavens
To us inviſible or dimly ſeen
In these thy loweſt works, yet these declare
Thy goodneſs beyond thought, and power divine:
Speak ye who beſt can tell, ye ſons of light,
Angels, for ye behold him, and with ſongs
And choral ſymphonies, day without night,
Circle his throne rejoicing, ye in heav'n,
On earth join all ye creatures to extoll
Him firſt, him laſt, him midſt, and without end.
Faireſt of ſtars, laſt in the train of night,
If better thou belong not to the dawn,
Sure pledge of day, that crown'ſt the ſmiling morn
With thy bright circlet, praiſe him in thy ſphere
While day ariſes, that ſweet hour of prime.
Thou ſun, of this great world both eye and ſoul,
Acknowledge him thy greater, ſound his praiſe.
In thy eternal courſe, both when thou climb'ſt,
And when high noon haſt gain'd, and when thou fallſt.
Moon, that now meetſt the orient ſun, now fli'ſt
With the fixt ſtars, fixt in their orb that flies,
And ye five other wand'ring fires that move
In myſtic dance not without ſong, reſound
His praiſe, who out of darkneſs call'd up light.
Air, and ye elements the eldeſt birth
Of nature's womb, that in quaternion run
Perpetual circle, multiform; and mix

Whether to deck with clouds th
Or wet the thirſty earth with falling sh
Riſing or falling ſtill advance his praiſe.
His praiſe ye winds, that from four quart
Breathe ſoft or loud; and wave your top
With every plant, in ſign of worſhip w
Fountains and ye, that warble, as ye fl
Melodious murmurs, warbling tune his
Join voices, all ye living ſouls, ye birds
That ſinging up to heaven gate aſcend,
Bear on your wings and in your notes
Ye that in waters glide, and ye that w
The earth, and ſtately tread, or lowly
Witneſs if I be ſilent, morn or even,
To hill, or valley, fountain, or freſh ſt
Made vocal by my ſong, and taught hi
Hail univerſal Lord, be bounteous ſtil
and if the nig

Their pamper'd boughs, and needed hands to ch
Fruitleſs embraces: or they led the vine
To wed her elm; ſhe ſpous'd about him twines
Her marriageable arms, and with her brings
Her dowr th'adopted clusters, to adorn
His barren leaves. Them thus imploi'd beheld
With pitie heav'n's high king, and to him call'd
Raphael, the ſociable ſpirit, that deign'd
To travel with Tobias, and ſecur'd
His marriage with the ſeventimes-wedded maid
Raphael, ſaid he, thou hearſt what ſtir on eart
Satan from hell ſcap't through the darkſome gul
Hath rais'd in Paradiſe, and how diſturb'd
This night the human pair, how he deſignes
In them at once to ruin all mankind.
Go therefore, half this day as friend with friend
Converſe with Adam, in what bowre or ſhade
Thou find'ſt him from the heat of noon retir'd,
To reſpite his day-labour with repaſt,
Or with repoſe; and ſuch diſcourſe bring on,
As may adviſe him of his happie ſtate,
Happineſs in his power left free to will,
Left to his own free will, his will though free,
Yet mutable; whence warn him to beware
He ſwerve not too ſecure: tell him withal
His danger, and from whom, what enemie
Late fall'n himſelf from heav'n, is plotting now
The fall of others from like ſtate of bliſs;
By violence, no, for that ſhall be withſtood,
But by deceit and lies; this let him know,
Left willfully tranſgreſſing he pretend

Surpriſal, unadmoniſht, unforewarn'd.
So ſpake th'eternal father, and fulfill'd
All juſtice: nor delaid the winged ſaint
After his charge receiv'd; but from among
Thouſand celeſtial ardors, where he ſtood
Vail'd with his gorgeous wings, up-ſpringing light
Flew through the midſt of heav'n; th'angelic quires
On each hand parting, to his ſpeed gave way
Through all th'empyreal road; till at the gate
Of heav'n arriv'd, the gate ſelf-open'd wide
On golden hinges turning, as by work
Divine the ſov'ran architect had fram'd.
From hence, no cloud, or, to obſtruct his ſight,
Star interpos'd, however ſmall he ſees,
Not unconform'd to other ſhining globes,
Earth and the gard'n of God, with cedars crown'd
Above all hills. As when by night the glaſs
Of Galileo, leſs affur'd, obſerves

ights, and to his proper ſhape returns
raph wing'd; ſix wings he wore, to ſhade
lineaments divine; the pair that clad
r ſhoulder broad, came mantling o'er his breaſt
h regal ornament; the middle pair
like a ſtarrie zone his waiſt, and round
ted his loins and thighs with downie gold
celours dipt in heav'n; the third his feet
low'd from either heele with feather'd maile
tinctur'd grain. Like Maia's ſon he ſtood,
ſhook his plumes, that heav'nly fragrance fill'd
circuit wide. Streit knew him all the bands
ngels under watch; and to his ſtate,
to his meſſage high in honour riſe;
m ſome meſſage high they gueſs'd him bound.
r glittering tents he paſs'd, and now is come
the bliſsful field, through groves of myrrhe,
flouring odours, caſſia, nard, and balme;
ilderneſs of ſweets; for nature here
ton'd as in her prime, and plaid at will
virgin fancies, pouring forth more ſweet,
e above rule or art; enormous bliſs.
through the ſpicie forreſt onward come
n diſcern'd, as in the dore he ſat
is cool bowre, while now the mounted ſun
down direct his fervid raies to warme
's inmoſt womb, more warmth than Adam need;
Eve within, due at her hour prepar'd
dinner ſavourie fruits, of taſte to pleaſe
appetite, and not diſreliſh thirſt
ectarous draughts between, from milkie ſtream,

Berrie or grape: to whom thus Adam call'd.
Haſte hither Eve, and worth thy ſight behold
Eaſtward among thoſe trees, what glorious ſhape
Comes this way moving; ſeems another morn
Ris'n on mid-noon; ſome great beheſt from heav'n
To us perhaps he brings, and will voutſafe
This day to be our gueſt. But go with ſpeed,
And what thy ſtores contain, bring forth and poure
Abundance, fit to honour and receive
Our heav'nly ſtranger; well we may afford
Our givers their own gifts, and large beſtow
From large beſtow'd, where nature multiplies
Her fertil growth, and by disburd'ning grows
More fruitful, which inſtructs us not to ſpare.
To whom thus Eve. Adam, earth's hallow'd mould,
Of God inſpir'd, ſmall ſtore will ſerve, where ſtore,
All ſeaſons, ripe for uſe hangs on the ſtalk;
Save what by frugal ſtoring firmneſs gains

Whatever earth all-bearing mother yeilds
In India eaſt or weſt, or middle ſhoare
In Pontus or the Punic coaſt, or where
Alcinous reign'd, fruit of all kinds, in coate,
Rough or ſmooth rin'd, or bearded huſk, or ſhell
She gathers, tribute large, and on the board
Heaps with unſparing hand; for drink the grape
She cruſhes, inoffenſive mouſt, and meathes
From many a berry, and from ſweet kernels preſt
She tempers dulcid creams, nor theſe to hold
Wants her fit veſſels pure, then ſtrews the ground
With roſe and odours from the ſhrub unſum'd.
Mean while our primitive great ſire, to meet
His god-like gueſt, walks forth, without more train
Accompani'd then with his own compleat
Perfections, in himſelf was all his ſtate,
More ſolemn then the tedious pomp that waits
On princes, when their rich retinue long
Of horſes led, and grooms beſmear'd with gold
Dazles the croud, and ſets them all agape.
Neerer his preſence Adam though not aw'd,
Yet with ſubmiſs approach and reverence meek,
As to a ſuperior nature, bowing low,

Thus ſaid. Native of heav'n, for other place
None can than heav'n ſuch glorious ſhape contain;
Since by deſcending from the thrones above,
Thoſe happie places thou haſt deign'd a while
To want, and honour theſe, voutſafe with us
Two onely, who yet by ſov'ran gift poſſeſs
This ſpacious ground, in yonder ſhadie bowre
To reſt, and what the garden choiceſt bears

As may not [illegible]
To visit thee; lead on thine where thy
Oreshades; for these mid-hours, till ev
I have at will. So to the sylvan lodge
They came, that like Pomona's arbor
With flowrets deck't and fragrant sme
Undeckt, save with herself more lovely
Then wood-nymph, or the fairest go
Of three that in mount Ida naked str
Stood to entertain her guest from hea
She needed, virtue proof, no thoug
Alter'd her cheek, on whom the ang
Bestow'd, the holy salutation us'd
Long after to blest Marie, second Ev

Haile mother of mankind, whos
Shall fill the world more numerous
Than with these various fruits the
[illegible] table. Rais'd of

To us for food and for delight hath caus'd
The earth to yield; unfavourie food perhaps
To spiritual nature; only this I know,
That one celestial father gives to all,
To whom the angel. Therefore what he gives
(Whose praise be ever sung) to man in part
Spiritual, may of purest spirits be found
No ingrateful food: and food alike those pure
Intelligential substances require
As doth your rational; and both contain
Within them every lower facultie
Of sense, whereby they hear, see, smell, touch,
Tasting concoct, digest, assimilate,
And corporeal to incorporeal turn.
For know, whatever was created, needs
To be sustain'd and fed; of elements
The grosser feeds the purer, earth the sea,
Earth and the sea feed air, the air those fires
Ethereal, and as lowest first the moon;
Whence in her visage round those spots, unpurg'
Vapours not yet into her substance turn'd.
Nor doth the moon no nourishment exhale
From her moist continent to higher orbes.
The sun that light imparts to all, receives
From all his alimental recompence
In humid exhalations, and at even
Sups with the ocean: though in heav'n the trees
Of life ambrosial fruitage bear, and vines
Yield nectar, though from off the boughs each m
We brush melliftuous dews, and find the groun
Cover'd with pearly grain; yet God hath here

To tranſubſtantiate ; what redounds, tranſp
Through ſpirits with eaſe ; nor wonder, if b
Of ſooty coal the empiric alchimiſt
Can turn, or holds it poſſible to turn
Metals of droſſieſt ore to perfect gold
As from the mine. Mean while at table E
Miniſter'd naked, and their flowing cups
With pleaſant liquors crown'd : O innocen
Deſerving Paradiſe ! if ever, then,
Then had the ſons of God excuſe to have b
Enamour'd at that ſight ; but in thoſe hear
Love unlibidinous reign'd, nor jealouſie
Was underſtood, the injur'd lover's hell.
Thus when with meats and drinks they
Not burden'd nature, ſudden mind aroſe
In Adam, not to let th'occaſion paſs
Given him by this great conference to kno

Thy favour, in this honour done to man,
Under whoſe lowly roof thou haſt voutſaf't
To enter, and theſe earthly fruits to taſte,
Food not of angels, yet accepted ſo,
As that more willingly thou couldſt not ſeem
At heav'n's high feaſts to have fed: yet what com
To whom the winged hierarch repli'd.
O Adam, one almightie is, from whom
All things proceed, and up to him return,
If not deprav'd from good, created all
Such to perfection, one firſt matter all,
Indu'd with various forms, various degrees
Of ſubſtance, and in things that live, of life;
But more refin'd, more ſpirituous, and pure,
As neerer to him plac't or neerer tending
Each in their ſeveral active ſphears aſſign'd,
Till body up to ſpirit work in bounds
Proportion'd to each kind, ſo from the root
Springs lighter the green ſtalk, from thence the le
More aerie, laſt the bright conſummate floure
Spirits odorous breathes: flours and their fruit
Man's nouriſhment, by gradual ſcale ſublim'd
To vital ſpirits aſpire, to animal,
To intellectual, give both life and ſenſe,
Fancie and underſtanding, whence the ſoul
Reaſon receives, and reaſon is her being,
Diſcurſive or intuitive; diſcourſe
Is oftest yours, the latter moſt is ours,
Differing but in degree, of kind the ſame.
Wonder not then, what God for you ſaw good
If I refuſe not, but convert, as you,

Here or in heav'nly Paradise above,
If ye be found obedient, and retain
Unalterably firm his love entire
Whose progenie you are. Mean while enjo
Your fill what happineſs this happie ſtate
Can comprehend, incapable of more.
To whom the patriarch of mankind repli'd
O favourable ſpirit, propitious gueſt,
Well haſt thou taught the way that might
Our knowledge, and the ſcale of nature ſe
From centre to circumference, whereon
In contemplation of created things
By ſteps we may aſcend to God. But ſay,
What means that caution join'd, " if ye l
" Obedient?" can we want obedience th
To him, or poſſibly his love deſert
Who form'd us from the duſt, and plac'd

God made thee perfect, not immutable;
And good he made thee, but to persevere
He left it in thy power, ordain'd thy will:
By nature free, not over-rul'd by fate
Inextricable, or strict necessity;
Our voluntary service he requires,
Not our necessitated, such with him
Finds no acceptance, nor can find; for how
Can hearts, not free, be try'd whether they serve
Willing or no, who will but what they must
By destinie, and can no other chuse?
Myself and all the angelic host that stand
In sight of God enthron'd, our happie state
Hold, as you yours, while our obedience holds;
On other surety none: freely we serve,
Because we freely love, as in our will
To love or not; in this we stand or fall:
And some are fall'n, to disobedience fall'n,
And so from heav'n to deepest hell: O fall
From what high state of bliss into what woe!
To whom our great progenitor. Thy words
Attentive, and with more delighted ear
Divine instructer, I have heard, than when
Cherubic songs by night from neighbouring hills
Aereal music send: nor knew I not
To be both will and deed created free;
Yet that we never shall forget to love
Our maker, and obey him whose command
Single, is yet so just, my constant thoughts
Assur'd me and still assure: though what thou tells
Hath *past in heav'n*, some doubt within me move

After ſhort pauſe aſſenting, thus began.
High matter thou injoinſt me, O prime
Sad taſk and hard, for how ſhall I relate
To human ſenſe th'inviſible exploits
Of warring ſpirits; how without remorſe
The ruin of ſo many glorious once
And perfect while they ſtood; how laſt un
The ſecrets of another world, perhaps
Not lawful to reveal? yet for thy good
This is diſpenc't, and what ſurmounts the
Of human ſenſe, I ſhall delineate ſo,
By lik'ning ſpiritual to corporal forms,
As may expreſs them beſt, though what if
Be but the ſhadow of heav'n, and things th
Each to other like, more than on earth is th
As yet this world was not, and chaos wilde
Reign'd where theſe heav'n's now roul, where

Forthwith from all the ends of heav'n appeer'd
Under their hierarchs in orders bright
Ten thouſand thouſand enſigns high advanc'd,
Standards, and gonfalons 'twixt van and reare
Streame in the aire, and for diſtinction ſerve
Of hierarchies, of orders, and degrees;
Or in their glittering tiſſues bear imblaz'd
Holy memorials, acts of zeal and love
Recorded eminent. Thus when in orbes
Of circuit inexpreſſible they ſtood,
Orb within orb, the father infinite,
By whom in bliſs imboſom'd ſat the ſon
Amidſt as from a flaming mount, whoſe top
Brightneſs had made inviſible, thus ſpake.
Hear all ye angels, progenie of light,
Thrones, dominations, princedoms, virtues, powers
Hear my decree, which unrevok't ſhall ſtand.
This day I have begot whom I declare
My only ſon, and on this holy hill
Him have anointed, whom ye now behold
At my right hand; your head I him appoint;
And by myſelf have ſworn to him ſhall bow
All knees in heav'n, and ſhall confeſs him Lord,
Under his great vice-gerent reign abide
United as one individual ſoul
For ever happie: him who diſobeys
Me diſobeys, breaks union, and that day
Caſt out from God and bleſſed viſion, falls
Into utter darkneſs, deep ingulft, his place
Ordain'd without redemption, without end.
So ſpake th'*omni*potent, and with his words

Then mo[illegible]
And in their motions harmonie divine
So ſmooths her charming tones, that God's
Liſtens delighted. Ev'ning now approach'd
(For we have alſo our ev'ning and our mor
We ours for change delectable, not need)
Forthwith from dance to ſweet repaſt they
Deſirous, all in circles as they ſtood,
Tables are ſet, and on a ſudden pil'd
With angel's food, and rubied nectar flow
In pearle, in diamond, and maſſie gold,
Fruit of delicious vines, the growth of he
On flours repos'd, and with freſh flourets
They eat, they drink, and in communion
Quaff immortality and joy, ſecure
Of ſurfet where full meaſure only bounds
Exceſs, before th'all-bounteous king, wh
With copious hand, rejoicing in their joy

Wide over all the plain, and wider far
Then all this globous earth in plain outspread,
(Such are the courts of God) th'angelic throng
Dispers'd in bands and files their camp extend
By living streams among the trees of life,
Pavilions numberless, and sudden rear'd,
Celestial tabernacles, where they slept
Fann'd with cool winds, save those who in their c
Melodious hymns about the sov'ran throne
Alternate all night long: but not so wak'd
Satan, so call him now, his former name
Is heard no more in heav'n; he of the first,
If not the first arch-angel, great in power,
In favour and pre-eminence, yet fraught
With envie against the son of God, that day
Honour'd by his great father, and proclaim'd
Messiah king anointed, could not bear
Through pride that sight, and thought himself imp
Deep malice thence conceiving and disdain,
Soon as midnight brought on the dusky hour
Friendliest to sleep and silence, he resolv'd
With all his legions to dislodge, and leave
Unworshipt, unobey'd the throne supreme
Contemptuous, and his next subordinate
Awak'ning, thus to him in secret spake.

Sleepst thou companion dear, what sleep can c
Thy eye-lids? and remember'st what decree
Of yesterday, so late hath past the lips
Of heav'n's almighty. Thou to me thy thought
Wast wont, I mine to thee was wont to impart;
Both waking we were one; how then can now

Thy ſleep diſſent? new laws thou ſeeſt impos'd;
New laws from him who reigns, new minds may raiſe
In us who ſerve, new councils, to debate
What doubtful may enſue, more in this place
To utter is not ſafe. Aſſemble thou
Of all thoſe myriads which we lead the chief;
Tell them that by command, ere yet dim night
Her ſhadowie cloud withdraws, I am to haſte,
And all who under me their banners wave,
Homeward with flying march where we poſſeſs
The quarters of the north, there to prepare
Fit entertainment to receive our king
The great Meſſiah, and his new commands,
Who ſpeedily through all the hierarchies
Intends to paſs triumphant, and give laws.
So ſpake the falſe arch-angel, and infus'd
Bad influence into th'unwarie breſt
Of his aſſociate: he together calls

Drew after him the third part of heav'n's hoſt:
Mean while th'eternal eye, whoſe ſight diſcernes
Abſtruſeſt thoughts, from forth his holy mount
And from within the golden lamps that burn
Nightly before him ſaw without their light
Rebellion riſing, ſaw in whom, how ſpred
Among the ſons of morn, what multitudes
Were banded to oppoſe his high decree;
And ſmiling to his onely ſon thus ſaid.

Son, thou in whom my glory I behold
In full reſplendence, heir of all my might,
Neerly it now concerns us to be ſure
Of our omnipotence, and with what arms
We mean to hold what anciently we claim
Of deitie or empire, ſuch a foe
Is riſing, who intends to erect his throne
Equal to ours, throughout the ſpacious north;
Nor ſo content, hath in his thought to trie
In battle, what our power is, or our right.
Let us adviſe, and to this hazard draw
With ſpeed what force is left, and all imploy
In our defence, leſt unawares we loſe
This our high place, our ſanctuarie, our hill.
To whom the ſon with calm aſpect and cleer
Light'ning divine, ineffable, ſerene,
Made anſwer. Mightie father, thou thy foes
Juſtly haſt in deriſion, and ſecure
Laught'ſt at their vain deſignes and tumults vain,
Matter to me of glory, whom their hate
Illuſtrates, when they ſee all regal power
Giv'n me to *quell their* pride, and in event

Know whether I be dextrous to ſubdue
Thy rebels, or be found the worſt in heav'n.
So ſpake the ſon, but Satan with his powers
Far was advanc't on winged ſpeed, an hoſt
Innumerable as the ſtars of night,
Or ſtars of morning, dew-drops, which the ſun
Impearls on every leaf and every flour.
Regions they paſs'd, the mighty regencies
Of ſeraphim and thrones and dominations
In their triple degrees, regions to which
All thy dominion, Adam, is no more
Than what this garden is to all the earth,
And all the ſea, from one entire globoſe
Stretcht into longitude; which having paſs'd
At length into the limits of the north
They came, and Satan to his royal ſeat
High on a hill, far blazing, as a mount

minations, princedomes, vertues, powers,
ſic titles yet remain
itular, ſince by decree
hath to himſelf ingroſs't
d us eclipſt under the name
ted, for whom all this haſte
narch, and hurried meeting here,
conſult how we may beſt
ıy be devis'd of honours new
ɔming to receive from us
yet unpaid, proſtration vile,
one, but double how endur'd,
his image now proclaim'd ?
ıtter counſels might erect
l teach us to caſt off this yoke ?
: your necks, and chuſe to bend
se ? ye will not, if I traſt
ght, or if ye know yourſelves
ns of heav'n poſſeſt before
if not equal all, yet free,
for orders and degrees
berty, but well conſiſts
ıaſon then or right affurte !
r ſuch as live by right
in power and ſplendor leſs,
ıal ? or can introduce
on us, who without law
h leſs for this to be our lord,
doration to th'abuſe
rial titles which affert
ın'd to govern, not to ſerve ?

Thus far his bold discourse without controule
Had audience, when among the seraphim
Abdiel, than whom none with more zeale ador'd
The deitie, and divine commands obey'd,
Stood up, and in a flame of zeale severe
The current of his fury thus oppos'd,
O argument blasphemous, false and proud!
Words which no eare ever to hear in heav'n
Expected, least of all from thee, ingrate,
In place thyself so high above thy peeres.
Canst thou with impious obliquie condemn
The just decree of God, pronounc't and sworn,
That to his only son by right endu'd
With regal scepter, every soul in heav'n
Shall bend the knee, and in that honour due
Confess him rightful king? unjust thou saidst
Flatly unjust, to bind with laws the free,

Or all angelic nature join'd in one,
Equal to him begotten son, by whom
As by his word the mighty father made
All things, ev'n thee, and all the spirits of heav'n
By him created in their bright degrees,
Crown'd them with glory, and to their glory nam'd
Thrones, dominations, princedoms, virtues, powers
Essential powers, nor by his reign obscur'd,
But more illustrious made, since he the head
One of our number thus reduc't becomes,
His laws our laws, all honour to him done
Returns our own. Cease then this impious rage,
And tempt not these; but hast'n to appease
Th'incensed Father, and th'incensed Son,
While pardon may be found in time besought.
So spake the fervent angel, but his zeale
None seconded, as out of season judg'd,
Or singular and rash, whereat rejoic'd
Th'apostat, and more haughty thus repli'd.
That we were form'd then saist thou? and the work
Of secondarie hands, by task transfer'd
From father to his son? strange point and new!
Doctrin which we would know whence learnt: who saw
When this creation was? remembrest thou
Thy making, while the Maker gave thee being?
We know no time when we were not as now;
Know none before us, self-begot, self-rais'd
By our own quick'ning power, when fatal course
Had circl'd his full orbe, the birth mature
Of this our native heav'n, ethereal sons.
Our puissance is our own, our own right hand

He ſaid, and as the ſound of waters deep
Hoarce murmur echo'd to his words appla
Through the infinite hoſt, nor leſs for tha
The flaming ſeraph fearleſs, though alone
Encompaſs'd round with foes, thus anſwe
O alienate from God, O ſpirit accurſt,
Forſak'n of all good ; I ſee thy fall
Determin'd, and thy hapleſs crew involv'd
In this perfidious fraud, contagion ſpred
Both of thy crime and puniſhment : henc
No more be troubled how to quit the yok
Of God's Meſſiah ; thoſe indulgent laws
Will not be now voutſaf't, other decrees
Againſt thee are gone forth without recall
That golden ſcepter which thou didſt reject
Is now an iron rod to bruiſe and break
Thy diſobedi

So ſpake the ſeraph Abdiel faithful found,
Among the faithleſs, faithful only he;
Among innumerable falſe, unmov'd,
Unſhaken, unſeduc'd, unterrifi'd
His loyaltie he kept, his love, his zeal;
Nor number, nor example with him wrought
To ſwerve from truth, or change his conſtant mind
Though ſingle. From amidſt them forth he paſs'd,
Long way through hoſtile ſcorn, which he ſuſteind
Superior, nor of violence fear'd aught;
And with retorted ſcorn his back he turn'd
On thoſe proud towrs to ſwift deſtruction doom'd.

The End of the Fifth Book.

Wak't by the circling hours, with rone ha
Unbarr'd the gates of light. There is a cav
Within the mount of God, faſt by his thro
Where light and darkneſs in perpetual rou
Lodge and diſlodge by turns, which makes th
Grateful viciſſitude, like day and night;
Light iſſues forth, and at the other dore
Obſequious darkneſs enters, till her hour
To veile the heav'n, though darkneſs there
Seem twilight here; and now went forth t
Such as in higheſt heav'n, array'd in gold
Empyreal, from before her vaniſht night,
Shot through with orient beams: when al
Cover'd with thick embattel'd ſquadrons b
Chariots and flaming arms, and fierie ſteed
Reflecting blaze on blaze, firſt met his vie
War he perceiv'd, war in procinct, and fo
Already known what he for news had thou

From midſt a golden cloud thus mild was heard.
Servant of God, well done, well haſt thou fou
The better fight, who ſingle haſt maintain'd
Againſt revolted multitudes the cauſe
Of truth, in word mightier than they in arms;
And for the teſtimony of truth haſt born
Univerſal reproach, far worſe to bear
Than violence: for this was all thy care
To ſtand approv'd in ſight of God, though worlds
Judg'd thee perverſe: the eaſier conqueſt now
Remains thee, aided by this hoſt of friends,
Back on thy foes more glorious to return
Than ſcorn'd thou didſt depart, and to ſubdue
By force, who reaſon for their law refuſe,
Right reaſon for their law, and for their king
Meſſiah, who by right of merit reigns.
Go Michael of celeſtial armies prince,
And thou in military proweſs next
Gabriel, lead forth to battle theſe my ſons
Invincible, lead forth my armed ſaints
By thouſands and by millions rang'd for fight;
Equal in number to that godleſs crew
Rebellious, them with fire and hoſtile arms
Fearleſs aſſault, and to the brow of heav'n
Purſuing drive them out from God and bliſs,
Into their place of puniſhment, the gulf
Of Tartarus, which ready opens wide
His fiery chaos to receive their fall.
So ſpake the ſovran voice, and clouds began
To darken all the hill, and ſmoak to rowl
In *duſkie wreathes*, reluctant flames, the ſign

Heroic ardor to advent'rous deeds
Under their god-like leaders, in the c
Of God and his Meſſiah. On they r
Indi ſolubly firm; nor obvious hill,
Nor ſtreit'ning vale, nor wood, nor f
Their perfect ranks; for high above
Their march was, and the paſſive air
Their nimble tread, as when the tot
Of birds in orderly array on wing
Came ſummon'd over Eden to receiv
Their names of thee; ſo over many
Of heav'n they march'd, and many a
Tenfold the length of this terrene: a
Far in the horizon to the north appe
From ſkirt to ſkirt a fierie region, ſt
In battailous aſpect, and neerer view
Briſtl'd with upright beams innumera

Aſpirer, but their thoughts prov'd fond and vain
In the mid way: though ſtrange to us it ſeem'd
At firſt, that angel ſhould with angel war,
And in fierce hoſting meet, who wont to meet
So oft in feſtivals of joy and love
Unanimous, as ſons of one great ſire
Hymning th'eternal Father: but the ſhout
Of battle now began, and ruſhing ſound
Of onſet ended ſoon each milder thought.
High in the midſt exalted as a god
Th'apoſtat in his ſun-bright chariot ſat
Idol of majeſty divine, encloſe'd
With flaming cherubim, and golden ſhields;
Then lighted from his gorgeous throne, for now
'Twixt hoſt and hoſt but narrow ſpace was left,
A dreadful interval, and front to front
Preſented ſtood in terrible array
Of hideous length: before the cloudie van,
On the rough edge of battle ere it join'd,
Satan with vaſt and haughtie ſtrides advanc't,
Came towring, arm'd in adamant and gold;
Abdiel that ſight endur'd not, where he ſtood
Among the mightieſt, bent on higheſt deeds,
And thus his own undaunted heart explores.
O heav'n! that ſuch reſemblance of the Higheſt
Should yet remain, where faith and realtie
Remain not; wherefore ſhould not ſtrength and migh
There fail where vertue fails, or weakeſt prove
Where boldeſt; though to fight unconquerable!
His puiſſance, truſting in th'Almightie's aid,
I mean to try, whoſe reaſon I have try'd

Forth ſtepping oppoſite, half way he met
His daring foe, at this prevention more
Incens't, and thus ſecurely him defi'd.

Proud, art thou met? thy hope was to
The highth of thy aſpiring unoppos'd,
The throne of God unguarded, and his
Abandon'd at the terror of thy power
Or potent tongue; fool, not to think h
Againſt th'Omnipotent to riſe in arms;
Who out of ſmalleſt things could witho
Have rais'd inceſſant armies to defeat
Thy folly; or with ſolitarie hand
Reaching beyond all limit at one blow
Unaided could have finiſh't thee, and w
Thy legions under darkneſs; but thou
All are not of thy train; there be who
Prefer.

From flight, seditious angel, to receive
Thy merited reward, the first assay
Of this right hand provok't, since first that tongu
Inspir'd with contradiction durst oppose
A third part of the Gods, in synod met
Their deities to assert, who while they feel
Vigour divine within them, can allow
Omnipotence to none. But well thou com'st
Before thy fellows, ambitious to win
From me some plume, that thy success may show
Destruction to the rest: this pause between
(Unanswer'd least thou boast) to let thee know;
At first I thought that liberty and heav'n
To heav'nly souls had been all one; but now
I see that most through sloth had rather serve,
Ministring spirits, train'd up in feast, and song;
Such hast thou arm'd, the minstrelsie of heav'n,
Servilitie with freedom to contend,
As both their deeds compar'd this day shall prove
To whom in brief thus Abdiel stern repli'd.
Apostat, still thou err'st, nor end wilt find
Of erring, from the path of truth remote:
Unjustly thou deprav'st it with the name
Of servitude to serve whom God ordains,
Or nature; God and nature bid the same,
When he who rules is worthiest, and excells
Them whom he governs. This is servitude,
To serve th'unwise, or him who hath rebell'd
Against his worthier, as thine now serve thee,
Thyself not free, but to thyself enthrall'd;
Yet lowdly darst our ministring upbraid.

Which hung not, but ſo ſwift with tempeſt
On the proud creſt of Satan, that no ſight,
Nor motion of ſwift thought, leſs could his
Such ruin intercept: ten paces huge
He back recoil'd; the tenth on bended knee
His maſſie ſpear upſtaid; as if on earth
Winds under ground or waters forcing way
Sidelong, had puſh't a mountain from his ſe
Half ſunk with all his pines. Amazement
The rebel thrones, but greater rage to ſee
Thus foil'd their mightieſt, ours joy fill'd, an
Preſage of victory and fierce deſire
Of battle: whereat Michael bid ſound
Th'arch-angel trumpet; through the vaſt o
It ſounded, and the faithful armies rung
Hoſanna to the higheſt: nor ſtood at gaze
The adverſe legions, nor leſs hideous join'd

And flying vaulted either hoſt with fire.
So under fierie cope together ruſh'd
Both battles maine, with ruinous aſſault
And inextinguiſhable rage; all heav'n
Reſounded, and had earth been then, all earth
Had to her centre ſhook, what wonder? when
Millions of fierce encountring angels fought
On either ſide, the leaſt of whom could wield
Theſe elements, and arm him with the force
Of all their regions: how much more of power
Armie againſt armie numberleſs to raiſe
Dreadful combuſtion warring, and diſturb,
Though not deſtroy, their happie native ſeat;
Had not th'eternal King omnipotent
From his ſtrong hold of heav'n high over-rul'd
And limited their might; though number'd ſuch
As each divided legion might have ſeem'd
A numerous hoſt, in ſtrength each armed hand
A legion, led in fight, yet leader ſeem'd
Each warrior ſingle as in chief, expert
When to advance, or ſtand, or turn the ſway
Of battle, open when, and when to cloſe
The ridges of grim war; no thought of flight,
None of retreat, no unbecoming deed
That argu'd fear; each on himſelf reli'd,
As onely in his arm the moment lay
Of victorie; deeds of eternal fame
Were done, but infinite: for wide was ſpred
That war and various; ſometimes on firm grou
A ſtanding fight, then ſoaring on main wing
Tormented all the air; all air ſeem'd then

Saw where the sword of
Squadrons at once, with huge two-hand
Brandisht aloft the horrid edge came do
Wide wasting; such destruction to with
He hasted, and oppos'd the rockie orb
Of tenfold adamant, his ample shield
A vast circumference: at his approac
The great arch-angel from his warlik
Surceas'd, and glad as hoping here
Inteſtine war in heav'n, the arch foe
Or captive drag'd in chains, with ho
And visage all enflam'd first thus be
Author of evil, unknown till thy re
Unnam'd in heav'n, now plenteou
These acts of hateful strife, hateft
Though heaviest by just measure o
And thy adherents: how hast tho
and into r

Thy ofspring, to the place of evil, hell,
Thou and thy wicked crew; there mingle broiles
Ere this avenging fword begin thy doome,
Or ſome more ſudden vengeance wing'd from G
Precipitate thee with augmented pain.
So ſpake the prince of angels; to whom thus
The adverſarie. Nor think thou with wind
Of airie threats to awe whom yet with deeds
Thou canſt not. Haſt thou turn'd the leaſt of the
To flight, or if to fall, but that they riſe
Unvanquiſht, eaſier to tranſact with me
That thou ſhouldſt hope, imperious, and with th
To chaſe me hence? err not, that ſo ſhall end
The ſtrife which thou call'ſt evil, but we ſtyle
The ſtrife of glorie: which we mean to win,
Or turn this heav'n itſelf into the hell
Thou faboeſt, here however to dwell free,
If not to reign: mean while thy utmoſt force,
And join him nam'd Almighty to thy aid,
I flie not, but have ſought thee far and nigh.
They ended parle, and both addreſt for fight
Unſpeakable; for who, though with the tongue
Of angels, can relate, or to what things
Liken on earth conſpicuous, that may lift
Human imagination to ſuch highth
Of godlike power: for likeſt gods they ſeem'd,
Stood they or mov'd, in ſtature, motion, arms
Fit to decide the empire of great heav'n.
Now wav'd their fierie ſwords, and in the air
Made horrid circles; two broad ſuns their ſhiel
Blaz'd oppoſite, while expectation ſtood

In horror; from each hand with ſpeed retir'd
Where erſt was thickeſt fight, th'angelic throng,
And left large field, unſafe within the wind
Of ſuch commotion, ſuch as to ſet forth
Great things by ſmall, if natures concord broke,
Among the conſtellations war were ſprung,
Two planets ruſhing from aſpect maligne
Of fierceſt oppoſition in mid ſkie,
Should combat, and their jarring ſpheres confound.
Together both with next to Almightie arm,
Uplifted imminent one ſtroke they aim'd
That might determine, and not need repeate,
As not of power, at once; nor odds appeer'd
In might or ſwift prevention; but the ſword
Of Michael from the armorie of God
Was giv'n him temper'd ſo, that neither keen
Nor ſolid might reſiſt that edge: it met
The ſword of Satan with ſteep force to ſmite

Back to his chariot; where it ſtood retir'd
From off the files of war; there they him laid
Gnaſhing for anguiſh and deſpite and ſhame
To find himſelf not matchleſs, and his pride
Humbl'd by ſuch rebuke, ſo far beneath
His confidence to equal God in power.
Yet ſoon he heal'd; for ſpirits that live throughe
Vital in every part, not as frail man
In entrailes, heart or head, liver or reines,
Cannot but by annihilating die;
Nor in their liquid texture mortal wound
Receive, no more than can the fluid air:
All heart they live, all head, all eye, all ear,
All intellect, all ſenſe, and as they pleaſe,
They limb themſelves, and colour, ſhape or ſiz
Aſſume, as likes them beſt, condenſe or rare.
Mean while in other parts like deeds deſerv'
Memorial, where the might of Gabriel fought,
And with fierce enſignes pierc'd the deep array
Of Moloc furious king, who him defi'd,
And at his chariot wheels to drag him bound
Threatn'd, nor from the holie one of heav'n
Refrein'd his tongue blaſphemous; but anon
Down cloven to the waſte, with ſhatter'd arms
And uncouth pain fled bellowing. On each win
Uriel and Raphael his vaunting foe,
Though huge, and in a rock of diamond arm'd,
Vanquiſh'd Adramelec, and Aſmadai,
Two potent thrones, that to be leſs then gods
Diſdain'd, but meaner thoughts learn'd in their fl
Mangl'd *with gaſtly* wounds through plate and

Angels contented with their fame in heav
Seek not the praiſe of men : the other ſo
In might though wondrous and in acts
Nor of renown leſs eager, yet by doome
Cancel'd from heav'n and ſacred memorie
Nameleſs in dark oblivion let them dwell.
For ſtrength from truth divided and from
Illaudable, naught merits but diſpraiſe
And ignominie, yet to glorie aſpires
Vain glorious, and through infamie ſeek fa
Therefore eternal ſilence be their doome.

And now their mightieſt quell'd, the batt
With many an inrod gor'd ; deformed rou
Enter'd, and foul diſorder ; all the ground
With ſhiver'd armour ſtrown, and on a h
Chariot, and charioteer lay overturn'd
And fiery foaming ſteeds ; what ſtood. rec

vulnerable, impenetrably arm'd:
ich high advantages their innocence
ave them above their foes, not to have sinn'd,
ot to have disobey'd; in fight they stood
nwearied, unobnoxious to be pain'd
/ wound, though from their place by violence mov'd.
ow Night her course began, and over heav'n
ducing darkness, grateful truce imposed,
nd silence on the odious din of war:
nder her cloudie covert both retir'd,
ictor and vanquish't: on the foughten field
ichael and his angels prevalent
ncamping, plac'd in guard their watches round,
nerubic waving fires: on the other part
tan with his rebellious disappeer'd,
r in the dark dislodg'd, and void of rest,
s potentates to councel call'd by night;
nd in the midst thus undismai'd began.
O now in danger tri'd, now known in armes
ot to be overpower'd, companions dear,
ound worthy not of liberty alone,
oo mean pretense, but what we more affect,
onour, dominion, glorie, and renown,
ho have sustain'd one day in doubtful fight
nd if one day, why not eternal days?)
hat heaven's lord had powerfullest to send
gainst us from about his throne, and judg'd
fficient to subdue us to his will,
it proves not so: then fallible, it seems,
f future we may deem him, though till now
nniscient thought. True is, less firmly arm'd,

The remedie; perhaps more valid arn
Weapons more violent, when next v
May ſerve to better us, and worſe o
Or equal what betwixt us made the
In nature none: if other hidden cauſ
Left them ſuperiour, while we can pr
Unhurt our minds, and underſtandin
Due ſearch and conſultation will diſc

He ſat; and in th'aſſembly next v
Niſroc, of principalities the prime;
As one he ſtood eſcap't from cruel
Sore toil'd, his riv'n arms to havoc
And cloudie in aſpect thus anſwerin
Deliverer from new lords, leader to
Enjoyment of our right as gods; y
For gods, and too unequal work we
Againſt unequal arms to fight in pa

But pain is perfect miſerie, the worſt
Of evils, and exceſſive, overturns
All patience. He who therefore can invent
With what more forcible we may offend
Our yet unwounded enemies, or arm
Ourſelves with like defence, to me deſerves
No leſs then for deliverance what we owe.
Whereto with look compos'd Satan repli'd.
Not uninvented that, which thou aright
Believ'ſt ſo main to our ſucceſs, I bring;
Which of us who beholds the bright ſurface
Of this ethereous mould whereon we ſtand,
This continent of ſpacious heav'n, adorn'd
With plant, fruit, flour ambroſial, gemms and
Whoſe eye ſo ſuperficially ſurveyes
Theſe things, as not to mind from whence they
Deep under ground, materials dark and crude,
Of ſpiritous and fierie ſpume, till toucht
With heav'n's ray, and temper'd they ſhoot fort
So beauteous, op'ning to the ambient light.
Theſe in their dark nativitie the deep
Shall yield us pregnant with infernal flame,
Which into hollow engines long and round
Thick ramm'd, at th'other bore with touch of
Dilated and infuriate ſhall ſend forth
From far with thundring noiſe among our foes
Such implements of miſchief as ſhall daſh
To pieces, and orewhelm whatever ſtands
Adverſe, that they ſhall fear we have diſarmed
The Thunderer of his only dreaded bolt.
Nor long ſhall be our labour, yet ere dawne,

To be th'inventer miſs'd, ſo eaſie it
Once found, which yet unfound moſt
Impoſſible: yet haply of thy race
In future days, if malice ſhould abo
Some one intent on miſchief, or inſ
With dev'liſh machination might de
Like inſtrument to plague the ſons
For ſin, on war and mutual ſlaughte
Forthwith from councel to the work
None arguing ſtood, innumerable ha
Were ready, in a moment up they t
Wide the celeſtial ſoile, and ſaw beno
Th'originals of nature in their crude
Conception; ſulphurous and nitrous
They found, they mingl'd, and with
Concocted and adуſted they reduc'd
To blackeſt grain, and in

[redacted]

Now when fair morn orient in heav'n appeer'd
Up rose the victor angels and to arms
The matin trumpet sung: in arms they stood
Of golden panoplie, refulgent host,
Soon banded; others from the dawning hills
Look'd round, and scouts each coast light-arm'd scour,
Each quarter, to descrie the distant foe,
Where lodg'd, or whither fled, or if for fight,
In motion or in alt: him soon they met
Under spread ensignes moving nigh, in slow
But firm battalion; back with speediest sail
Zophiel, of cherubim the swiftest wing,
Came flying, and in mid air aloud thus cried.
Arme, warriours, arm for fight, the foe at hand,
Whom fled we thought, will save us long pursuit
This day, fear not his flight; so thick a cloud
He comes, and fettl'd in his face I see
Sad resolution and secure: let each
His adamantine coat gird well, and each
Fit well his helme, gripe fast his orbed shield,
Born even or high, for this day will pour down,
If I conjecture aught, no drizling showr,
But rattling storm of arrows barb'd with fire.
So warn'd he them aware themselves, and soon
In order, quit of all impediment;
Instant without disturb they took allarm,
And onward move embattell'd; when behold
Not distant far with heavie pace the foe
Approaching gross and huge; in hollow cube
Training his devilish enginrie, impal'd
On every side with shadowing squadrons deep,

To hide the fraud. At interview both ſtood
A while, but ſuddenly at head appear'd
Satan: and thus was heard commanding loud.
Vanguard, to right and left the front unfold;
That all may ſee who hate us, how we ſeek
Peace and compoſure, and with open breaſt
Stand readie to receive them, if they like
Our overture, and turn not back perverſe;
But that I doubt, however witneſs heav'n,
Heav'n witneſs thou anon, while we diſcharge
Freely our part; ye who appointed ſtand
Do as ye have in charge, and briefly touch
What we propound, and loud that all may hear.
So ſcoffing in ambiguous words, he ſcarce
Had ended; when to right and left the front
Divided, and to either flank retir'd.
Which to our eyes diſcover'd new and ſtrange,
A triple mounted row of pillars laid

From those deep-throated engines belcht, whose
Embowel'd with outrageous noise the air,
And all her entrails tore, disgorging foule
Their devilish glut, chain'd thunder-bolts and h
Of iron globes, which on the victor host
Level'd, with such impetuous fury smote,
That whom they hit, none on their feet might
Though standing stiff as rocks, but down they
By thousands, angel on arch-angel rowl'd;
The foomer for their memo, unarm'd they might
Have easily as spirits evaded swift
By quick contraction or remove; but now
Foule dissipation follow'd and forc't rout;
Nor serv'd it to relax their serried files.
What should they do? if on they rusht, repulse
Repeated, and indecent overthrow
Doubl'd, would render them yet more despis'd,
And to their foes a laughter; for in view
Stood ranke of Seraphim another row
In posture to displode their second tire
Of thunder: back defeated to return
They worse abhorr'd. Satan beheld their plight
And to his mates thus in derision call'd.

O friends, why come not on these victors proud
Ere while they fierce were coming, and when we
To entertain them fair with open front
And breast, (what could we more?) propounded
Of compulsion, strait they chang'd their minds
Flew off, and into strange vagaries fell,
As they would dance, yet for a dance they seem'd
Somewhat extravagant and wilde, perhaps

Such as we might perceive [illegible]
And ſtumbl'd many, who receives them
Had need from head to foot well unde
Not underſtood, this gift they have beſi
They ſhew us when our foes walk not
So they among themſelves in pleaſant
Stood ſcoffing, highthn'd in their thoug
All doubt of victorie, eternal might
To match with their inventions they pr
So eaſie, and of his thunder made a ſ
And all his hoſt derided, while they ſto
A while in trouble; but they ſtood no
Rage prompted them at length, and fo
Againſt ſuch helliſh miſchief fit to opp
Forthwith (behold the excellence, the
Which God hath in his mighty angels p
Their arms away they threw, and to
(For earth hath this varietie from heav

When coming towards them so dread they saw
The bottom of the mountains upward turn'd,
Till on those cursed engines triple-row
They saw them whelm'd, and all their confidence
Under the weight of mountains buried deep,
Themselves invaded next, and on their heads
Main promontories flung, which in the air
Came shadowing, and oppress whole legions arm'd,
Their armour help'd their harm, crush't in and bruis'd
Into their substance pent; which wrought them pain
Implacable, and many a dolorous groan,
Long struggling underneath, ere they could wind
Out of such prison, though spirits of purest light,
Purest at first, now gross by sinning grown.
The rest in imitation to like arms
Betook them, and the neighbouring hill uptore;
So hills amid the air encounter'd hills
Hurl'd to and fro with jaculation dire,
That under ground, they fought in dismal shade;
Infernal noise; war seem'd a civil game
To this uproar; horrid confusion heapt
Upon confusion rose; and now all heav'n
Had gone to wrack, with ruin overspred,
Had not th'almightie father where he sits
Shrin'd in his sanctuarie of heav'n secure,
Consulting on the sum of things, foreseen
This tumult, and permitted all, advis'd:
That his great purpose he might so fulfill,
To honour his anointed son aveng'd
Upon his enemies, and to declare
All *power on him* transferr'd: whence to his son

Two days, as we compute the days a
Since Michael and his powers went fo
Thefe difobedient; fore hath beeh the
As likelieft was, when two ſuch foes
For to themſelves I left them, and tho
Equal in their creation they were form
Save what ſin hath impair'd, which ye
Inſenſibly, for I ſuſpend their doom;
Whence in perpetual fight they needs
Endleſs, and no ſolution will be found
War wearied hath performed what war
And to diſorder'd rage let looſe the reine
With mountains as with weapons arm'
Wild work in heav'n, and dangerous to
Two days are therefore paſt, the third i
For thee I have ordain'd it, and thus fa
Have ſuffer'd, that the glorie may be sh

Go then thou mightiest in thy father's might,
Ascend my chariot, guide the rapid wheels
That shake heav'n's basis, bring forth all my war,
My bow and thunder, my almightie arms
Gird on, and sword upon thy puissant thigh;
Pursue these sons of darkness, drive them out
From all heav'n's bounds into the utter deep:
There let them learn, as likes them, to despise
God and Messiah his anointed king.
He said, and on his son with rays direct
Shone full, he all his father full expreſt
Ineffable into his face receiv'd,
And thus the filial godhead answering spake.
O father, O supream of heav'nly thrones,
First, highest, holiest, best, thou always seekst
To glorifie thy son, I always thee,
As is most just; this I my glorie account,
My exaltation, and my whole delight,
That thou in me well pleas'd, declarst thy will
Fulfill'd, which to fulfil is all my bliss.
Scepter and power, thy giving, I assume,
And gladlier shall resign, when in the end
Thou shalt be all in all, and I in thee
For ever, and in me all whom thou lov'st:
But whom thou hat'st, I hate, and can put on
Thy terrors, as I put thy mildness on,
Image of thee in all things; and shall soon,
Arm'd with thy might, rid heav'n of these rebell'd,
To their prepar'd ill mansion driven down
To chains of darkness, and th'undying worm,
That *from thy just* obedience could revolt,

From the right hand of glorie where he ſa
And the third ſacred morn began to ſhine
Dawning through heav'n: forth ruſh'd wi
The chariot of paternal deitie,
Flaſhing thick flames, wheel within wheel
Itſelf inſtinct with ſpirit, but convoy'd
By four cherubic ſhapes, four faces each
Had wondrous, as with ſtars their bodies
And wings were ſet with eyes, with eyes t
Of beril, and careering fires between;
Over their heads a chryſtal firmament,
Whereon a ſaphir throne, inlaid with pure
Amber, and colours of the ſhowrie arch.
He in celeſtial panoplie all arm'd
Of radiant Urim, work divinely rought,
Aſcended, at his right hand victorie
Sate eagle-wing'd, beſide him hung his bo
And quiver with three-bolted thunder ſto

On the chryſtallin ſkie, in ſaphir thron'd.
Illuſtrious far and wide, but by his own
Firſt ſeen, them unexpected joy ſurpriz'd,
When the great enſign of Meſſiah blaz'd
Aloft by angels born, his ſign in heav'n:
Under whoſe conduct Michael ſoon reduc'd
His armie, circumfus'd on either wing,
Under their head imbodied all in one.
Before him power divine his way prepar'd;
At his command the uprooted hills retir'd
Each to his place, they heard his voice and went
Obſequious, heav'n his wonted face renew'd,
And with freſh flourets hill and valley ſmil'd.
This ſaw his hapleſs foes, but ſtood obdur'd,
And to rebellious fight rallied their powers
Inſenſate, hope conceiving from deſpair.
In heav'nly ſpirits could ſuch perverſeneſs dwell?
But to convince the proud what ſigns availe,
Or wonders move th'obdurate to relent?
They hard'n'd more by what might moſt reclaim
Grieving to ſee his glorie, at the fight
Took envie, and aſpiring to his highth,
Stood reimbattell'd fierce, by force or fraud
Weening to proſper, and at length prevail
Againſt God and Meſſiah, or to fall
In univerſal ruin laſt, and now
To final battel drew, diſdaining flight,
Or faint retreat; when the great ſon of God
To all his hoſt on either hand thus ſpake.

Stand ſtill in bright array ye ſaints, here ſtand
Ye angels arm'd, this day from battle reſt;

Nor multitude, [illegible]
God's indignation on these godless pour'd
By me; not you but me they have despis'd,
Yet envied; against me is all their rage,
Because the father, t'whom in heav'n supreme
Kingdom and power and glorie appertains,
Hath honour'd me according to his will,
Therefore to me their doom he hath assign'd
That they may have their wish, to trie wit
In battle which the stronger proves, they a
Or I alone against them, since by strength
They measure all, of other excellence
Not emulous, nor care who them excells;
Nor other strife with them do I voutsafe.

So spake the son, and into terrour chang
His count'nance too severe to be beheld
And full of wrauth bent on his enemies.
At once the four spred out their starrie wi

ll but the throne itſelf of God. Full ſoon
mong them he arriv'd; in his right hand
raſping ten thouſand thunders, which he ſent
fore him, ſuch as in their ſouls infix'd
agues; they aſtoniſht all reſiſtance loſt,
l courage; down their idle weapons drop'd;
re ſhields and helmes, and helmed heads he rode
f thrones and mighty ſeraphim proſtrate,
hat wiſh'd the mountains now might be again
rown on them as a ſhelter from his ire.
or leſs on either ſide tempeſtuous fell
s arrows, from the fourfold-viſag'd foure,
ſtinct with eyes, and from the living wheels,
ſtinct alike with multitude of eyes,
ne ſpirit in them rul'd, and every eye
lar'd lightning, and ſhot forth pernicious fire
mong the accurſt, that wither'd all their ſtrength,
nd of their wonted vigour left them drain'd,
hauſted, ſpiritleſs, afflicted, fall'n.
et half his ſtrength he put not forth, but check'd
s thunder in mid volie, for he meant
ot to deſtroy, but root them out of heav'n:
ne overthrown he rais'd, and as a herd
f goats or timorous flock together throng'd
ove them before him thunder-ſtruck, purſu'd
ith terrors and with furies to the bounds
nd chryſtal wall of heav'n, which op'ning wide,
owl'd inward, and a ſpacious gap diſclos'd
to the waſtful deep; the monſtrous ſight
rook them with horror backward, but far worſe
g'd them behind; headlong themſelves they threw

Nine days they fell; confounded chaos
And felt tenfold confufion in their fal
Through his wilde anarchie, fo huge a
Incumber'd him with ruin: hell at laſt
Yawning receiv'd them whole, and on
Hell their fit habitation fraught with fir
Unquenchable, the houſe of woe and p
Diſburden'd heav'n rejoic'd, and ſoon re
Her mural breach, returning whence it
Sole victor from th'expulſion of his foes
Meſſiah his triumphal chariot turn'd:
To meet him all his ſaints, who ſilent ſt
Eye witneſſes of his almightie acts,
With jubilie advanc'd; and as they went
Shaded with branching palme, each order
Sung triumph, and him ſung victorious ki
Son, heire, and lord, to him dominion gi

What might have elſe to human race been hid;
The diſcord which befel, and war in heav'n
Among th'angelic powers, and the deep fall
Of thoſe too high aſpiring, who rebell'd
With Satan, he who envies now thy ſtate,
Who now is plotting how he may ſeduce
Thee alſo from obedience, that with him
Bereav'd of happineſs thou maiſt partake
His puniſhment, eternal miſerie;
Which would be all his ſolace and revenge,
As a deſpite done againſt the moſt high,
Thee once to gain companion of his woe.
But liſt'n not to his temptations, warne
Thy weaker; let it profit thee to have heard
By terrible example the reward
Of diſobedience; firm they might have ſtood,
Yet fell; remember, and fear to tranſgreſs.

The End of the Sixth Book.

DESCEND from heav'n, Urar
If rightly thou art call'd, V
Following above th'olympian hill
Above the flight of Pegaſean win
The meaning, not the name I ca
Nor of the muſes nine, nor on t
Of old olympus dwell'ſt, but h
Before the hills appeered, or fou
Thou with eternal wiſdom didſt
Wiſdom thy ſiſter, and with he
In preſence of th'almighty fath
With thy celeſtial ſong. Up l
Into the heav'n of heav'ns I h
An earthlie gueſt, and drawr
Thy tempring; with like ſaf
Return me to my native elen
Leaſt from this flying ſteed u

On evil days though fall'n, and evil tongues;
In darkneſs, and with dangers compaſt round,
And ſolitude; yet not alone, while thou
Viſit'ſt my ſlumbers nightly, or when morn
Purples the eaſt: ſtill govern thou my ſong,
Urania, and fit audience find, though few.
But drive far off the barbarous diſſonance
Of Bacchus and his revellers, the race
Of that wild rout that tore the Thracian bard
In Rhodope, where woods and rocks had ears
To rapture, till the ſavage clamour drown'd
Both harp and voice; nor could the muſe defend
Her ſon. So fail not thou, who thee implores:
For thou art heav'nly, ſhe an empty dream.

Say goddeſs, what enſu'd when Raphael,
The affable arch-angel, had forewarn'd
Adam by dire example to beware
Apoſtaſie, by what befell in heav'n
To thoſe apoſtates, leſt the like befall
In Paradiſe to Adam or his race,
Charg'd not to touch the interdicted tree,
If they tranſgreſs, and light that ſole command,
So eaſily obey'd amid the choice
Of all taſtes elſe to pleaſe their appetite,
Though wandring. He with his conſorted Eve
The ſtorie heard attentive, and was fill'd
With admiration, and deep muſe to hear
Of things ſo high and ſtrange, things to their thou
So unimaginable as hate in heav'n,
And war ſo near the peace of God in bliſs
With ſuch confuſion: but the evil ſoon

Of heav'n and earth compl...
When, and whereof created, for w
What with Eden or without was d
Before his memorie, as one whose
Yet scarce allay'd still eyes the cur
Whose liquid murmur heard new
Proceeded thus to ask his heav'nly

Great things, and full of wond
Far differing rom this world, tho
Divine interpreter, by favour sent
Down from the empyrean to for
Us timely of what might else ha
Unknown, which human knowl
For which to the infinitly good v
Immortal thanks, and his adm
Receave with solemn purpose t
Immutably his sovran will, the
... But since

Innumerable, and this which yields or fills
All space, the ambient aire wide interfus'd
Imbracing round this florid earth, what cauſe
Mov'd the creator in his holy reſt
Through all eternitie ſo late to build
In chaos, and the work begun, how ſoon
Abſolv'd, if unforbid thou maiſt unfold
What we, not to explore the ſecrets aſke
Of his eternal empire, but the more
To magnifie his works, the more we know.
And the great light of day, yet wants to run
Much of his race though ſteep, ſuſpenſe in heav'n
Held by thy voice, thy potent voice he hears,
And longer will delay to hear thee tell
His generation, and the riſing birth
Of nature from the unapparent deep:
Or if the ſtar of ev'ning and the moon
Haſte to thy audience, night with her will bring
Silence, and ſleep liſtning to thee will watch,
Or we can bid his abſence, till thy ſong
End, and diſmiſs thee ere the morning ſhine.
Thus Adam his illuſtrious gueſt beſought:
And thus the godlike angel anſwer'd mild.
This alſo thy requeſt with caution aſkt
Obtaine: though to recount almightie works
What words or tongue of ſeraph can ſuffice,
Or heart of man ſuffice to comprehend?
Yet what thou canſt attain, which beſt may ſerve
To glorifie the maker, and infer
Thee alſo happier, ſhalt not be withheld
Thy hearing, ſuch commiſſion from above

Although is left besides to search
But knowledge is as food, and
Her temperance over appetite,
In measure what the mind may
Oppresses else with surfet, and
Wisdom to folly, as nourishmen
Know then, that after Lucifer
(So call him, brighter once amidf
Of angels, then that star the star
Fell with his flaming legions thr
Into his place, and the great son
Victorious with his saints, th'om
Eternal father from his throne beh
Their multitude, and to his son t
At least our envious foe hath fai
All like himself rebellious, by who
This inaccessible high strength the
Of deitie fo

at leaſt his heart exalt him in the harmo
lready done, to have diſpeopl'd heav'n,
y damage fondly deem'd, I can repaire
hat detriment, if ſuch it be to loſe
elf-loſt, and in a moment will create
nother world, out of one man a race
f men innumerable, there to dwell,
ot here, till by degrees of merit rais'd
hey open to themſelves at length the way
p hither, under long obedience tri'd,
nd earth be chang'd to heav'n, and heav'n to earth,
ne kingdom, joy and union without end.
ſean while inhabit laxe, ye powers of heav'n,
nd thou my word, begotten ſon, by thee
his I perform, ſpeak thou, and be it done:
y overſhadowing ſpirit and might with thee
end along, ride forth, and bid the deep
Vithin appointed bounds be heav'n and earth,
oundleſs the deep, becauſe I am who fill
nfinitude, nor vacuous the ſpace.
hough I uncircumſcrib'd myſelf retire,
nd put not forth my goodneſs, which is free
o act or not, neceſſitie and chance
pproach not me, and what I will is fate.
So ſpake th'almightie, and to what he ſpake
is word, the filial godhead, gave effect.
mmediate are the acts of God, more ſwift
han time or motion, but to human ears
annot without proceſs of ſpeech be told,
o told as earthly notion can receive.
reat triumph and rejoicing was in heav'n;

...ions of the jus
Glorie and praiſe, whoſe wiſe
Good out of evil to create; in
Of ſpirits maligne a better rac
Into their vacant room, and t
His good to worlds and ages i
So ſang the hierarchies: mean
On his great expedition now a
Girt with omnipotence, with ra
Of majeſtie divine, ſapience an
Immenſe, and all his father in
About his chariot numberleſs w
Cherub and ſeraph, potentates a
And vertues, wing'd ſpirits, and
From the armoury of God, wher
Myriads betwen two brazen moun
Againſt a ſolemn day, harneſt at
Celeſtial equipage; and ...

Outrageous as a ſea, dark, waſteful, wilde,
Up from the bottom turn'd by furious windes
And ſurging waves, as mountains to aſſault
Heav'n's highth, and with the center mix the pole.
Silence, ye troubl'd waves, and thou deep, peace,
Said then th'omnific word, your diſcord end:
Nor ſtaid, but on the wings of cherubim
Uplifted, in paternal glory rode
Far into chaos, and the world unborn;
For chaos heard his voice: him all his train
Follow'd in bright proceſſion to behold
Creation, and the wonders of his might.
Then ſtaid the fervid wheels, and in his hand
He took the golden compaſſes, prepar'd
In God's eternal ſtore, to circumſcribe
This univerſe, and all created things:
One foot he center'd, and the other turn'd
Round through the vaſt profunditie obſcure,
And ſaid, thus far extend, thus far thy bounds,
This be thy juſt circumference, O world.
Thus God the heav'n created, thus the earth,
Matter unform'd and void: darkneſs profound
Cover'd th'abyſs: but on the watrie calm
His brooding wings the ſpirit of God outſpred,
And vital vertue infus'd, and vital warmth
Throughout the fluid maſs, but downward purg'd
The black tartareous cold infernal dregs
Adverſe to life: then founded, then conglob'd
Like things to like, the reſt to ſeveral place
Diſparted, and between ſpun out the air,
And earth ſelf-ballanc't on her center hung.

Sojourn'd the while. God ſaw the ligl
And light from darkneſs by the hemiſph
Divided: light the day, and darkneſs
He nam'd. Thus was the firſt day eev
Nor paſt uncelebrated, nor unſung
By the celeſtial quires, when orient ligl
Exhaling firſt from darkneſs they beheld
Birth-day of heav'n and earth; with jo
The hollow univerſal orb they fill'd,
And touch't their golden harps, and hy
God and his works, creatour him they
Both when firſt eev'ning was, and whe

Again, God ſaid, let there be firma
Amid the waters, and let it divide
The waters from the waters: and Go
The firmament, expanſe of liquid, pu
Tranſparent, elemental air, diffus'd

heav'n he nam'd the firmament: so eev'n
morning chorus sung the second day.
he earth was form'd, but in the womb as yet
vaters, embryon immature involv'd,
eer'd not: over all the face of earth
n ocean flow'd, not idle, but with warme
ific humour soft'ning all her globe,
nented the great mother to conceave,
ate with genial moisture, when God said
ather'd now ye waters under heav'n
one place, and let dry land appeer.
nediately the mountains huge appeer
ergent, and their broad bare backs upheave
the clouds, their tops ascend the skie:
igh as heav'd the tumid hills, so low
vn sunk a hollow bottom broad and deep,
acious bed of waters: thither they
ted with glad precipitance, uprowl'd
drops on dust conglobing from the drie;
rise in crystal wall, or ridge direct,
haste; such flight the great command impress'd
the swift floods: as armies at the call
trumpet (for of armies thou hast heard)
op to their standard, so the watrie throng,
re rowling after wave, where way they found,
teep, with torrent rapture, if through plaine,
ebbing; nor withstood them rock or hill,
they, or under ground, or circuit wide
h serpent errour wandring, found their way,
d on the washie oose deep channels wore;
ie, e're *God had bid* the ground be drie,

—— grass, herb
And fruit tree yielding fruit afte
Whoſe ſeed is in herſelf upon the
He ſcarce had ſaid, when the ba
Deſert and bare, unſightly, unad
Brought forth the tender graſs,
Her univerſal face with pleaſant
Then herbs of every leaf, that'
Op'ning their various colours, a
Her boſom ſmelling ſweet: and
Forth flouriſh't thick the cluſtrin
The ſmelling gourd, up ſtood t
Embattell'd in her field: and the
And buſh with frizl'd hair impli
Roſe as in dance the ſtately trees
Their branches hung with copiou
Their bloſſoms: with high woods
With tufts the valliee

made, and every herb, before it grew
he green ſtemm; God ſaw that it was good:
ev'n and morn recorded the third day.
gain th'almightie ſpake: Let there be lights
i in th'expanſe of heaven to divide
day from night; and let them be for ſignes,
ſeaſons, and for dayes, and circling years,
. let them be for lights as I ordain
ir office in the firmament of heav'n
give light on the earth; and it was ſo.
l God made two great lights, great for their uſe
man, the greater to have rule by day,
leſs by night alterne: and made the ſtars,
l ſet them in the firmament of heav'n
illuminate the earth, and rule the day
heir viciſſitude, and rule the night,
l light from darkneſs to divide. God ſaw,
veying his great work, that it was good:
of celeſtial bodies firſt the ſun
nightie ſpheare he fram'd, unlightſom firſt,
ough of ethereal mould: then form'd the moon
hoſe, and every magnitude of ſtars,
d fow'd with ſtars the heav'n thick as a field:
light by far the greater part he took,
inſplanted from her cloudie ſhrine, and plac'd
the ſun's orb, made porous to receive
d drink the liquid light, firm to retaine
r gather'd beams, great palace now of light,
her as to their fountain other ſtars
airing, in their gold'n urns draw light,
d hence the morning planet guilds her horns

...circled with bright rayes, joyous to run
His longitude through heav'n's high rode:
Dawn, and the Pleiades before him danc'
Shedding sweet influence: less bright the
But opposite in leveld west was set
His mirror, with full face borrowing her l
From him, for other light she needed non
In that aspect, and still that distance kee
Till night, then in the east her turn she s
Revolv'd on heav'n's great axle, and her p
With thousand lesser lights dividual holds,
With thousand thousand stars, that then a
Spangling the hemisphere: then first adorn
With their bright luminaries that set and r
Glad evening and glad morning crown'd the

And God said, let the waters generate
Reptil with spawn abundant, living soul:
And let fowle flie above the earth, with w

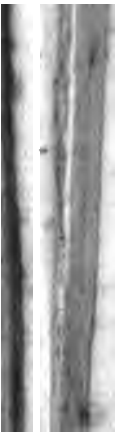
the fowle be multiply'd on the earth,
th the founds and ſeas, each creek and bay
e innumerable ſwarme, and ſhoales
that with their finns and ſhining ſcales
ider the green wave, in ſculles that oft
mid ſea: part ſingle or with mate
ie ſea weed their paſture, and through groves
ſtray, or ſporting with quick glance
the ſun their wav'd coats dropt with gold,
eir pearlie ſhells at eaſe, attend
triment, or under rocks their food
d armour watch: on ſmooth the ſeale,
ided dolphins play: part huge of bulk
ing unweildie, enormous in their gate
t the ocean: there leviathan
of living creatures, on the deep
like a promontorie ſleeps or ſwims,
ms a moving land, and at his gilles
h, and at his trunk ſpouts out a ſea.
hile the tepid caves, and fens and ſhoares
ood as numerous hatch, from the egg that ſoon
with kindly rupture forth diſclos'd
allow young, but feather'd ſoon and fledge
mm'd their penns, and ſoaring th'air ſublime
ang deſpis'd the ground, under a cloud
ect; there the eagle and the ſtork
s and cedar tops their eyries build:
ſtly wing the region, part more wiſe
mon, rang'd in figure wedge their way,
nt of ſeaſons, and ſet forth
erie caravan high over ſeas

... the woods, and spread thei
Till ev'n, nor then the solemn nigh
Ceas'd warbling, but all night tun'
Others on silver lakes and rivers ba
Their downie breast; the swan wit
Between her white wings mantling
Her state with oarie feet: yet oft t
The dank, and rising on stiff penno
The mid aerial skie: others on gro
Walk'd firm; the crested cock whos
The silent hours, and th'other whos
Adorns him, colour'd with the florid
Of rainbows and starrie eyes. The
With fish repleniſht, and the air with
Ev'ning and morn solemniz'd the fift
The sixt, and of creation last aro
With ev'ning harps and mattin, whe
Let th'earth bring forth ...

The cattel in the fields and meddowes green:
Thoſe rare and ſolitarie, theſe in flocks
Paſturing at once, and in broad herds upſprung
The graſſie clods now calv'd, now half appee
The tawnie lion, pawing to get free
His hinder parts, then ſprings as broke from b
And rampant ſhakes his brinded main; the ou
The libbard, and the tyger, as the moale
Riſing, the crumbl'd earth above them threw
In hillocks; the ſwift ſtag from under ground
Bore up his branching head: ſcarce from his m
Behemoth biggeſt born of earth upheav'd
His vaſtneſs: fleec't the flocks and bleating roſe,
As plants: ambiguous between ſea and land
The river horſe and ſcalie crocodile.
At once came forth whatever creeps the ground
Inſect or worme; thoſe wav'd their limber fans
For wings, and ſmalleſt lineaments exact
In all the liveries dect of ſummer's pride
With ſpots of gold and purple, azure and green
Theſe as a line their long dimenſion drew,
Streaking the ground with ſinuous trace; not a
Minims of nature; ſome of ſerpent kind
Wondrous in length and corpulence involv'd
Their ſnakie foulds, and added wings. Firſt cr
The parſimonious emmet, provident
Of future, in ſmall room large heart enclos'd,
Pattern of juſt equalitie perhaps
Hereafter, join'd in her popular tribes
Of commonaltie: ſwarming next appear'd
The femal bee that feeds her huſband drone

Not noxious, but obedient as th
Now hear'n in all her glorie sh
Her motions, as the great first
First wheel'd their course; earth
Consummate lovely smil'd; air, w
By fowl, fish, beast, was flown, w
Frequent; and of the sixt day ye
There wanted yet the master wo
Of all yet done; a creature wh
And brute as other creatures, bu
With sanctitie of reason, might
His stature, and upright with st
Govern the rest, self-knowing,
Magnanimous to correspond wi
But grateful to acknowledge wh
Descends, thither with heart an
Directed in devotion, to adore

Beast of the field, and over all the earth,
And every creeping thing that creeps the ground.
This said, he form'd thee, Adam, thee o man
Dust of the ground, and in thy nostrils breath'd
The breath of life; in his own image he
Created thee, in the image of God
Express, and thou becam'st a living soul.
Male he created thee, but thy consort
Female for race; then bless'd mankind, and said,
Be fruitful, multiply, and fill the earth,
Subdue it, and throughout dominion hold
Over fish of the sea, and fowle of the aire,
And every living thing that moves on the earth.
Wherever thus created, for no place
Is yet distinct by name, thence, as thou know'st,
He brought thee into this delicious grove,
This garden, planted with the trees of God,
Delectable both to behold and taste;
And freely all their pleasant fruit for food
Gave thee, all sorts are here that all th'earth yields,
Varietie without end; but of the tree
Which tasted works knowledge of good and evil,
Thou mai'st not; in the day thou eat'st, thou di'st;
Death is the penaltie impos'd, beware,
And govern well thy appetite, least sin
Surprise thee, and her black attendant death.
Here finish'd he, and all that he had made
View'd, and behold all was entirely good;
So ev'n and morn accomplish'd the first day.
Yet not till the creator from his work
Desisting, though unwearied, up returnd



Symphonious of ten thousand
Angelic harmonies: the earth
Refounded, (thou remember'
The heav'ns and all the consta
The planets in their stations li
While the bright pomp ascend
Open, ye everlasting gates, the
Open, ye heav'ns, your living
The great creator from his wo
Magnificent, his six days worl
Open, and henceforth oft; for
To visit oft the dwellings of ju
Delighted, and with frequent i
Thither will send his winged m
On errands of supernal grace.
The glorious train ascending: h
That open'd wide her blazing po
To God's

Prerunning night; when at the holy mount
f heav'n's high-ſeated top, th'imperial throne
f godhead, fixt for ever firm and ſure,
he filial power arriv'd, and ſat him down
'ith his great father (for he alſo went
viſible,) yet ſtaid (ſuch priviledge
ath omnipreſence) and the work ordain'd,
uthor, and end of all things, and from work
ow reſting, bleſs'd and hallow'd the ſeav'nth day,
; reſting on that day from all his work,
t not in ſilence holy kept; the harp
id work and reſted not, the ſolemn pipe,
id dulcimer, all organs of ſweet ſtop,
l ſounds on fret by ſtring or golden wire,
mper'd ſoft tunings, intermixt with voice
oral or uniſon: of incenſe clouds
ming from golden cenſers hid the mount.
eation and the fix dayes acts they ſung,
reat are thy works, Jehovah, infinite
y power; what thought can meaſure thee or tongue
elate thee; greater now in thy return
hen from the giant angels; thee that day
hy thunders magnifi'd; but to create
greater than created to deſtroy.
Who can impair thee, mighty king, or bound
hy empire? eaſily the proud attempt
f ſpirits apoſtate and their counſels vain
hou haſt repell'd, while impiouſly they thought
hee to diminiſh, and from thee withdraw
he number of thy worſhippers, who ſeeks
o leſſen thee, againſt his purpoſe ſerves

Of deſtin'd habitation ; but thou knowſt
Their ſeaſons : among theſe the ſeat of man
Earth with her nether ocean circumfus'd,
Their pleaſant dwelling-place. Thrice happi
And ſons of men, whom God hath thus adv
Created in his image, there to dwell
And worſhip him, and in reward to rule
Over his works, on earth, in ſea, or air,
And multiply a race of worſhippers
Holy and juſt : thrice happie if they know
Their happineſs, and perſevere upright.
So ſung they, and the empyrean rung,
With Halleluias : thus was ſabbath kept.
And thy requeſt think now fulfill'd, that
How firſt this world and face of things beg
And what before thy memorie was done
From the beginning, that poſteritie
Inform'd by thee might know : if elſe th

PARADISE LOST

BOOK VIII.

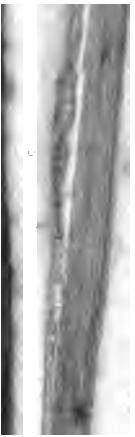
THE angel ended, and in Adam's eare
So charming left his voice, that he a while
thought him still speaking, still stood fixt to hear
him as new wak't, thus gratefully repli'd,
What thanks sufficient, or what recompence
equal have I to render thee, divine
historian, who thus largely hast allay'd
the thirst I had of knowledge, and vouchsaf't
this friendly condescension to relate
things else by me unsearchable, now heard
with wonder, but delight, and, as is due,
with glorie attributed to the high
creator; something yet of doubt remains,
which only thy solution can resolve.
When I behold this goodly frame, this world
of heav'n and earth consisting, and compute,
their magnitudes, this earth a spot, a graine,
an atom, with the firmament compar'd
and all her number'd stars, that seem'd to rowle
spaces incomprehensible (for such
their distance argues and their swift return
diurnal) merely to officiate light
round this opacous earth, this punctual spot,
one day and night; in all their vast survey
useless besides, reasoning I oft admire,
how nature wise and frugal could commit

Serv'd by more noble then herſelf, attains
Her end without leaſt motion, and receivi
As tribute ſuch a ſumleſs journey brought
Of incorporeal ſpeed, her warmth and ligh
Speed, to deſcribe whoſe ſwiftneſs number

So ſpake our ſire, and by his count'nan
Entring on ſtudious thoughts abſtruſe, wh
Perceaving where ſhe ſat retir'd in ſight,
With lowlineſs majeſtic from her ſeat,
And grace that won who ſaw to wiſh her
Roſe, and went forth among her fruits an
To viſit how they proſper'd, bud and blo
Her nurſerie; they at her coming ſprung
And toucht by her fair tendance g'adlier gr
Yet went ſhe not, as not with ſuch diſcou
Delighted, or not capable her eare
Of what was high: ſuch pleaſure ſhe reſe
Adam relating, ſhe ſole auditreſs:

Such pairs, in love and mutual honour join'd?
With goddeſs-like demeanour forth ſhe went;
Not unattended, for on her as queen
A pomp of winning graces waited ſtill,
And from about her ſhoot darts of deſire
Into all eyes to wiſh her ſtill in ſight.
And Raphael now to Adam's doubt propos'd
Benevolent and facil thus repli'd.

To aſk or ſearch I blame thee not, for heav'n
Is as the book of God before thee ſet,
Wherein to read his wondrous works, and learne
His ſeaſons, hours, or days, or months, or years:
This to attain, whether heav'n move or earth,
Imports not, if thou reck'n right, the reſt
From man or angel the great architect
Did wiſely to conceal, and not divulge
His ſecrets to be ſcann'd by them who ought
Rather admire; or if they lift to try
Conjecture, he his fabric of the heav'ns
Hath left to their diſputes, perhaps to move
His laughter at their quaint opinions wide
Hereafter, when they come to model heav'n
And calculate the ſtars, how they will weild
The mightie frame, how build, unbuild, contrive
To ſave appearances, how gird the ſphear
With centric and eccentric ſcribl'd o're,
Cycle and epicyle, orb in orb:
Alreadie by thy reaſoning this I gueſs,
Who art to lead thy offspring, and ſuppoſeſt
That bodies bright and greater ſhould not ſerve
The leſs not bright, nor heav'n ſuch journies run,



Whose vertue on itself wo
But in the fruitful earth;
His beams, unactive else,
Yet not to earth are those h
Officious, but to thee earth
And for the heav'n's wide
The maker's high magnificen
So spacious, and his line stu
That man may know he dw
An edifice too large for him,
Lodg'd in a small partition,
Ordain'd for uses to his lord
The swiftness of these circles
Though numberless, to his
That to corporeal substances
Speed almost spiritual; me the
Who since the morning hour,
Where God resides, and

Plac'd heav'n from earth so far, that earthly sight,
If it presume, might err in things too high,
And no advantage gain. What if the sun
Be center to the world, and other stars
By his attractive virtue, and their own
Incited, dance about him various rounds?
Their wand'ring course now high, now low, then hid,
Progressive, retrograde, or standing still,
In six thou seest; and what if seventh to these
The planet earth, so steadfast though she seem,
Insensibly three different motions move?
Which else to several spheres thou must ascribe,
Mov'd contrarious with thwart obliquities,
Or save the sun his labour, and that swift
Nocturnal and diurnal rhomb suppos'd,
Invisible else above all stars, the wheel
Of day and night; which needs not thy belief,
If earth industrious of herself fetch day
Travelling east, and with her part averse
From the sun's beam meet night, her other part
Still luminous by his ray. What if that light
Sent from her through the wide transpicuous air,
To the terrestrial moon be as a star
Enlightning her by day, as she by night
This earth? reciprocal, if land be there,
Fields and inhabitants: her spots thou seest
As clouds, and clouds may rain, and rain produce
Fruits in her soft'ned soil, for some to eat
Allotted there; and other suns perhaps
With their attendant moons thou wilt descry
Communicating male and female light,

&c.

Light back to them, is obvious to dispute
But whether thus these things, or wheth
Whether the sun predominant in heav'n
Rise on the earth, or earth rise on the s
He from his east his flaming rode begin,
Or she from west her silent course advan
With inoffensive pace that spinning sleep
On her soft axle, while she paces even,
And bears thee soft with the smooth air
Sollicit not thy thoughts with matters hi
Leave them to God above, him serve an
Of other creatures, as him pleases best,
Wherever plac't, let him dispose: joy t
In what he gives to thee, this Paradise
And thy fair Eve; heav'n is for thee to
To know what passes there; be lowlie
Think only what concerns thee and thy
Dream not of other worlds, what crea

And freed from intricacies, taught to live,
The eaſieſt way, nor with perplexing thoughts
To interrrupt the ſweet of life, from which
God hath bid dwell far off all anxious cares,
And not moleſt us, unleſs we ourſelves
Seek them with wandring thoughts, and notion
But apt the mind or fancie is to roave
Uncheckt, and of her roaving is no end;
Till warn'd, or by experience taught, ſhe learn
That not to know at large of things remote
From uſe, obſcure and ſuttle, but to know
That which before us lies in daily life,
Is the prime wiſdom, what is more, is ſume,
Or emptineſs, or fond impertinence,
And renders us in things that moſt concern
Unpractis'd, unprepar'd, and ſtill to ſeek.
Therefore from this high pitch let us deſcend
A lower flight, and ſpeak of things at hand
Uſeful, whence haply mention may ariſe
Of ſomething not unſeaſonable to aſk
By ſufferance, and thy wonted favour deign'd.
Thee I have heard relating what was done
Ere my remembrance: now hear me relate
My ſtorie, which perhaps thou haſt not heard;
And day is yet not ſpent; till then thou ſeeſt
How ſuttly to detain thee I deviſe,
Inviting thee to hear while I relate,
Fond, were it not in hope of thy reply:
For while I ſit with thee, I ſeem in heav'n,
And ſweeter thy diſcourſe is to my ear
Then fruits *of palm-tree* pleaſanteſt to thirſt:

And hunger both, from labour, at the hour
Of ſweet repaſt; they ſatiate, and ſoon fill,
Though pleaſant, but thy words with grace divin
Imbu'd, bring to their ſweetneſs no ſatietie.

To whom thus Raphael anſwer'd heav'nly mee
Nor are thy lips ungraceful, ſire of men,
Nor tongue ineloquent; for God on thee
Abundantly his gifts hath alſo pour'd
Inward and outward both, his image fair:
Speaking or mute all comlineſs and grace
Attends thee, and each word, each motion form
Nor leſs think we in heav'n of thee on earth
Than of our fellow ſervant, and inquire
Gladly into the wayes of God with man:
For God we ſee hath honour'd thee, and ſet
On man his equal love: ſay therefore on;
For I that day was abſent, as befell,
Bound on a voyage uncouth and obſcure,

rmeas, and loud lament, and furious rage.
ad we return'd up to the coasts of light
e sabbath ear'ning: so we had in charge.
t thy relation next; for I attend,
as'd with thy words no less than thou with mine.
So spake the godlike power, and thus our sire
r man to tell how human life began.
hard; for who himself beginning knew?
ire with thee still longer to converse
luc'd me. As new wak't from soundest sleep
t on the flourie herb I found me laid
balmie sweat, which with his beames the sun
on dri'd, and on the melting moisture fed.
ait toward heav'n my wandring eyes I turn'd,
d gaz'd a while the ample skie, till rais'd
quick instinctive motion up I sprung,
thitherward endeavouring, and upright
ood on my feet; about me round I saw
ll, dale, and shadie woods, and sunnie plains,
d liquid lapse of murmuring streams; by these,
eatures that liv'd, and mov'd, and walk'd, or flew,
ds on the branches warbling: all things smil'd,
ith fragrance and with joy my heart oreflow'd.
yself I then perus'd, and limb by limb
rvey'd, and sometimes went, and sometimes ran
ith supple joints, and lively vigour led:
t who I was, or where, or from what cause,
new not; to speak I tri'd, and forthwith spake,
y tongue obey'd, and readily could name
hat e're I saw. Thou sun, said I, fair light,
d thou enlight'nd earth, so fresh and gay,

From whom I have
And feel that I am
While thus I call'd,
From where I firſt
This happie light;
On a green ſhadie b
Penſive I ſat me do
Firſt found me; an
My drouſed ſenſe,
I then was paſſing
Inſenſible, and fort
When ſuddenly ſtoo
Whoſe inward appe
My fancy to believe
And liv'd: one can
And ſaid, thy mani
Firſt man, of men
Firſt father; call'd

e ſcarce pleaſant ſeem'd. Each tree
ireſt fruit, that hung to the eye
r'd in me ſudden appetite
:at; whereat I wak'd, and found
yes all real, as the dream
low'd: here had new begun
had not he who was my guide
n among the trees appear'd,
: Rejoycing, but with awe
: his feet I fell
ar'd me, and whom thou ſoughtſt I am,
uthor of all this thou ſeeſt
nd about thee or beneath.
[give thee, count it thine
p, and of the fruit to eat:
hat in the garden grows
glad heart; fear here no dearth:
: whoſe operation brings
good and ill, which I have ſet
thy obedience and thy faith,
en by the tree of life,
at I warn thee, ſhun to taſte,
)itter conſequence: for know,
:at'ſt thereof, my ſole command
rvitably thou ſhalt die;
mortal, and this happie ſtate
ell'd from hence into a world
rrow. Sternly he pronounc'd
diction, which reſounds
1 mine ear, though in my choice
but ſoon his cleer aſpect

Return'd and gracious purpoſe thus renew'd.
Not only theſe fair bounds, but all the earth
To thee and to thy race I give; as lords
Poſſeſs it, and all things that therein live,
Or live in ſea, or air, beaſt, fiſh, and fowle.
In ſign whereof each bird and beaſt behold
After their kinds; I bring them to receave
From thee their names, and pay thee fealtie
With low ſubjection; underſtand the ſame
Of fiſh within their watry reſidence,
Not hither ſummon'd, ſince they cannot change
Their element to draw the thinner air.
As thus he ſpake, each bird and beaſt behold
Approaching two and two, theſe cowring low
With blandiſhment, each bird ſtoop'd on his wi
I nam'd them, as they paſs'd, and underſtood
Their nature, with ſuch knowledge God endu'
My ſudden apprehenſion: but in theſe

ith a smile more brightnd, thus repli'd,
hat call'st thou solitude, is not the earth
various living creatures, and the air
enisht, and all these at thy command
ome and play before thee, know'st thou not
language and their ways, they also know,
reason not contemptibly; with these
pastime, and bear rule; thy realm is large.
ake the universal lord, and seem'd
dering. I with leave of speech implor'd,
humble deprecation thus repli'd.
t not my words offend thee, heav'nly power,
naker, be propitious while I speak.
thou not made me here thy substitute,
these inferiour far beneath me set?
ng unequals what societie
sort, what harmonie or true delight?
h must be mutual, in proportion due
and receiv'd; but in disparitie
one intense, the other still remiss
ot well suit with either, but soon prove
ous alike: of fellowship I speak
as I seek, fit to participate
ational delight, wherein the brute
ot be human consort; they rejoice
with their kind, lion with lioness;
tly them in pairs thou hast combin'd;
h less can bird with beast, or fish with fowle
ell converse, nor with the ox the ape;
se then can man with beast, and least of all.
hereto th'almighty answer'd, not displeas'd.

Of happineſs, or not? who am a
From all eternitie, for none I kn
Second to me or like, equal nau
How have I then with whom to h
Save with the creatures which I m
To me inferiour, infinite deſcents
Beneath what other creatures are

He ceas'd, I lowly anſwer'd. T
The highth and deepth of thy eter
All human thoughts come ſhort, ſu
Thou in thyſelf art perfect, and i
Is no deficience found; not ſo is m
But in degree, the cauſe of his de
By converſation with his like to he
Or ſolace his defects. No need th
Shouldſt propagate, already infinite
And through all numbers abſolute.

y creature to what highth thou wilt
ommunion, deifi'd;
g cannot theſe erect
nor in their ways complaiſance find.
d'nd ſpake, and freedom us'd
id acceptance found, which gain'd
from the gracious voice divine.
try thee, Adam, I was pleas'd,
knowing not of beaſts alone,
aſt rightly nam'd, but of thyſelf,
ll the ſpirit within thee free,
ot imparted to the brute,
ſhip therefore unmeet for thee
was thou freely ſhouldſt diſlike,
inded ſtill; I, ere thou ſpak'ſt,
good for man to be alone,
compaine as then thou ſaw'ſt
, for trial only brought,
hou could'ſt judge of fit and meet:
bring ſhall pleaſe thee, be aſſur'd,
thy fit help, thy other ſelf,
ctly to thy heart's deſire.
or I heard no more, for now
his heav'nly overpower'd,
long ſtood under, ſtrein'd to the highth
ial colloquie ſublime,
ject that excells the ſenſe,
ent, ſunk down, and ſought repair
ich inſtantly fell on me, call'd
in aide and clos'd mine eyes.
clos'd, but op'n left the cell

And life-blood streaming fr
But suddenly with flush dif
The rib he form'd and fashi
Under his forming hands a
Manlike, but different sex, s
That what seem'd fair in all
Mean, or in her summ'd up,
And in her looks, which from
Sweetness into my heart, unf
And into all things from her
The spirit of love and conten
She disappeer'd, and left me
To find her, or for ever to d
Her loss, and other pleasures a
When out of hope, beheld her
Such as I saw her in my dream,
With what all earth or her

Thy words, creator bounteous and benigne,
Giver of all things fair, but fairest this
Of all thy gifts, nor envieſt. I now ſee
Bone of my bone, fleſh of my fleſh, my ſelf
Before me; woman is her name, of man
Extracted; for this cauſe he ſhall forgo
Father and mother, and to his wife adhere;
And they ſhall be one fleſh, one heart, one ſoul.
She heard me thus; and though divinely brought,
Yet innocence and virgin modeſtie,
Her virtue and the conſcience of her worth,
That would be woo'd, and not unſought be won,
Not obvious, not obtruſive, but retir'd,
The more deſirable, or to ſay all;
Nature herſelf, though pure of ſinful thought,
Wrought in her ſo, that ſeeing me, ſhe turn'd;
I follow'd her, ſhe what was honour knew,
And with obſequious majeſty approv'd
My pleaded reaſon. To the nuptial bowre
I led her bluſhing like the morn: all heav'n,
And happie conſtellations on that hour
Shed their ſelecteſt influence; the earth
Gave ſign of gratulation, and each hill;
Joyous the birds; freſh gales and gentle aires
Whiſper'd it to the woods, and from their wings
Flung roſe, flung odours from the ſpicie ſhrub,
Diſporting, till the amorous bird of night
Sung ſpouſal, and bid haſte the evening ſtar
On his hill top, to light the bridal lamp.
Thus I have told thee all my ſtate, and brought
My ſtorie to the ſum of earthly bliſs

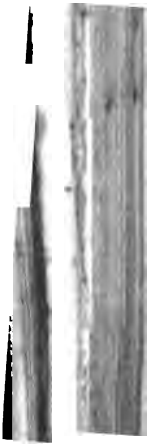
Tranſported touch ; here
Commotion ſtrange, in all
Superiour and unmov'd, h
Againſt the charm of beau
Or nature fail'd in me, an
Not proof enough ſuch ob
Or from my ſide ſubductio
More than enough ; at le
Too much of ornament,
Elaborate, of inward leſs
For well I underſtand in t
Of nature her th'inferiour
And inward faculties, wh
In outward alſo her reſemb
His image who made both
The character of that dom
O're other creatures : yet

nd reason on her wait,
led first not after made
; and to consummate all,
mind and noblenes their seat
loviest, and create an awe
is a guard angelic plac't.
e angel with contracted brow.
: nature, she hath done her part;
thine, and be not diffident
he deserts thee not, if thou
r, when most thou needst her nigh.
; overmuch to things
, as thou thyself perceiv'st.
nir'st thou, what transports thee so,
fair no doubt, and worthy well
g, thy honouring, and thy love,
ction: weigh with her thyself;
oft times nothing profits more
eem, grounded on just and right
d; of that skill the more thou know'st,
will acknowledge thee her head,
se yield all her shows:
n for thy delight the more,
it with honour thou mait love
ho sees when thou art seen least wise.
se of touch whereby mankind
seem such dear delight
her, think the same vouchsaf't
each beast; which would not be
le common and divulg'd, if aught
r'd were worthy to subdue

By which to heav'nly love thou m
Not funk in carnal pleafure, for w
Among the beafts no mate for thee

To whom thus half abafh't Ad
Neither her out-fide form'd fo fair,
In procreation common to all kin
(Though higher of the genial bed
And with myfterious reverence I
So much delights me, as thofe gr
Thofe thoufand decencies that da
From all her words and actions,
And fweet compliance, which d
Union of mind, or in us both on
Harmonie to behold in wedded
More grateful than harmonious
Yet thefe fubject not; I to thee
What inward thence I feel, not

Expreſs they, by looks only, or do they mix
Irradiance, virtual or immediate touch?
To whom the angel with a ſmile that glow'd
Celeſtial roſie red, love's proper hue,
Anſwer'd. Let it ſuffice thee that thou knowſt
Us happie, and without love no happineſs.
Whatever pure thou in the body enjoy'ſt
(And pure thou wert created) we enjoy
In eminence, and obſtacle find none
Of membrane, joint, or limb, exclufive bars:
Eaſier than air with air, if ſpirits embrace,
Total they mix, union of pure with pure
Deſiring; nor reſtrain'd conveyance need
As fleſh to mix with fleſh, or ſoul with ſoul.
But I can now no more; the parting ſun
Beyond the earth's green cape and verdant iſles
Heſperean ſets, my ſignal to depart.
Be ſtrong, live happie, and love, but firſt of all
Him whom to love is to obey, and keep
His great command; take heed leaſt paſſion ſw
Thy judgement to do aught, which elſe free wil
Would not admit; thine and of all thy ſons
The weal or woe in thee is plac't; beware.
I in thy perſevering ſhall rejoice,
And all the bleſt: ſtand faſt; to ſtand or fall
Free in thine own arbitriment it lies.
Perfect within, no outward aid require;
And all temptation to tranſgreſs repel.
So ſaying, he aroſe; whom Adam thus
Follow'd with benediction. Since to part,
Go heavenly gueſt, ethereal meſſenger,



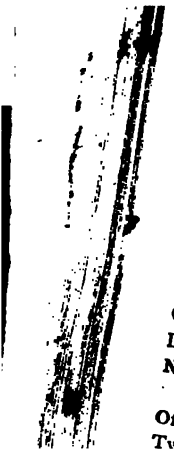
So parted they, [illegible]
From the thick ſhade, and [illegible]

The End of the [illegible]

ARADISE LOST.

BOOK. IX.

O more of talk where God or angel gueſt
With man, as with his friend, familiar us'd
indulgent, and with him partake
repaſt, permitting him the while
l diſcourſe unblam'd: I now muſt change
notes to tragic; foul diſtruſt, and breach
al on the part of man, revolt,
liſobedience: on the part of heav'n
alienated, diſtance and diſtaſte,
r and juſt rebuke, and judgement giv'n,
brought into this world a world of woe,
nd her ſhadow death and miſerie
's harbinger: ſad taſk, yet argument
eſs but more heroic than the wrauth
ern Achilles on his foe purſu'd
e fugitive about Troy wall; or rage
urnus for Lavinia diſeſpous'd;
eptune's ire or Juno's, that ſo long
ex'd the Greek and Cytherea's ſon;
ſwerable ſtyle I can obtain
y celeſtial patroneſs, who deignes
ightly viſitation unimplor'd,
dictates to me ſlumbering, or inſpires
my unpremeditated verſe:
firſt this ſubject for heroic ſong
'd me long choofing, and beginning late;



Or tilting furniture, embl
Impreſſes quaint, caparifo
Baſes and tinſell trappings,
At jouſt and torneament ;
Serv'd up in hall with fewe
The ſkill of artifice or offic
Not that which juſtly gives h
To perſon or to poem, Me
Nor ſkill'd nor ſtudious, high
Remaines, ſufficient of itſelf
That name, unleſs an age too
Climate, or years damp my int
Depreſt, and much they may,
Not hers who brings it nightly t
The ſun was ſunk, and after
Of Heſperus, whoſe offic
Twilight

ight he fled, and at midnight return'd
n compaſſing the earth, cautious of day,
e Uriel regent of the ſun deſcri'd
entrance, and forewarn'd the cherubim
at kept their watch; thence full of anguiſh driv'n,
e ſpace of ſeven continu'd nights he rode
ith darkneſs, thrice the equinoctial line
e circl'd, four times croſs'd the car of night
rom pole to pole, traverſing each colure;
n the eighth return'd, and on the coaſt averſe
rom entrance or cherubic watch, by ſtealth
found unſuſpected way. There was a place
Now not, though ſin, not time, firſt wrought the change,
Where Tigris at the foot of Paradiſe
Into a gulf ſhot under ground, till part
Roſe up a fountain by the tree of life;
In with the river ſunk, and with it roſe
Satan involv'd in riſing miſt, then fought
Where to lie hid; ſea he had ſearcht and land
From Eden over Pontus, and the pool
Maeotis, up beyond the river Ob;
Downward as far antartic; and in length
Weſt from Orontes to the ocean barr'd
At Darien, thence to the land where flows
Ganges and Indus: thus the orb he roam'd
With narrow ſearch; and with inſpection deep
Conſider'd every creature, which of all
Moſt opportune might ſerve his wiles, and found
The ſerpent ſubtleſt beaſt of all the field.
Him after long debate, irreſolute
Of thoughts revolv'd, his final ſentence choſe

Proceeding, which in other beaſts obſerv
Doubt might beget of diabolic pow'r
Active within beyond the ſenſe of brute.
Thus he reſolv'd, but firſt from inward
His burſting paſſion into plaints thus pou
O earth, how like to heav'n, if not pr
More juſtly, ſeat worthier of gods, as bu
With ſecond thoughts, reforming what w
For what God after better worſe would b
Terreſtrial heav'n, danc't round by other
That ſhine, yet bear their bright officious
Light above light, for thee alone, as ſeem
In thee concentring all their precious bean
Of ſacred influence: as God in heav'n
Is center, yet extends to all, ſo thou
Centring receav'ſt from all thoſe orbs; in
Not in themſelves, all their known vertue
Productive in herb, plant, and nobler birt

Pleasures about me, so much more I feel
Torment within me, as from the hateful siege
Of contraries; all good to me becomes
Bane, and in heaven much worse would be my state
But neither here seek I, no nor in heav'n
To dwell, unless by mastring heav'n's supreme;
Nor hope to be myself less miserable
By what I seek, but others to make such
As I, though thereby worse to me redound:
For only in destroying I find ease
To my relentless thoughts; and him destroy'd,
Or won to what may work his utter loss,
For whom all this was made, all this will soon
Follow, as to him linkt in weal or woe,
In woe then; that destruction wide may range:
To me shall be the glorie sole among
The infernal powers, in one day to have marr'd
What he Almightie styl'd, six nights and days
Continu'd making, and who knows how long
Before had been contriving, though perhaps
Not longer, than since I in one night freed
From servitude inglorious well nigh half
Th'angelic name, and thinner left the throng
Of his adorers: he to be aveng'd,
And to repaire his numbers thus impair'd,
Whether such virtue spent of old now fail'd
More angels to create, if they at least
Are his created, or to spite us more,
Determin'd to advance into our room
A creature form'd of earth, and him endow,
Exalted from so base original,

A dread, and to abuse, till wrapt in mist
Of midnight vapour glide obſcure, and pri
In every buſh and brake, where hap may
The ſerpent ſleeping, in whoſe mazie foul
To hide me, and the dark intent I bring.
O foul deſcent! that I who erſt contended
With gods to ſit the higheſt, am now conf
Into a beaſt, and mixt with bruțial ſlime,
This eſſence to incarnate and imbrute,
That to the highth of deitie aſpir'd;
But what will not ambition and revenge
Deſcend to? who aſpires muſt down as low
As high he ſoar'd, obnoxious firſt or laſt
To baſeſt things. Revenge, at firſt though
Bitter ere long back on itſelf recoiles;
Let it; I reck not, ſo it light well aim'd,
Since higher I fall ſhort, on him who next
Provokes my envie, this new favourite

ſerpent: him faſt ſleeping ſoon he found
ıbyrinth of many a round ſelf rowl'd,
head the midſt, well ſtor'd with ſubtle wiles:
yet in horrid ſhade or diſmal den,
nocent yet, but on the graſſie herb
leſs unfear'd he ſlept: in at his mouth
devil enter'd, and his brutal ſenſe,
eart or head, poſſeſſing ſoon inſpir'd
ı act intelligential; but his ſleep
ırb'd not, waiting cloſe th'approach of morn.
when as ſacred light began to dawn
den on the humid flours, that breath'd
ir morning incenſe, when all things that breathe,
ı th'earth's great altar ſend up ſilent praiſe
he creator, and his noſtrils fill
ı grateful ſmell, forth came the human pair
join'd their vocal worſhip to the quire
reatures wanting voice, that done, partake
ſeaſon, prime for ſweeteſt ſcents and aires:
ı commune how that day they beſt may ply
r growing work: for much their work outgrew
ıands diſpatch of two gardning ſo wide.
Eve firſt to her husband thus began.

lam, well may we labour ſtill to dreſs
garden, ſtill to tend plant, herb and flour,
leaſant taſk enjoyn'd, but till more hands
ıs, the work under our labour grows,
rious by reſtraint; what we by day
vergrown, or prune, or prop, or bind,
ight or two with wanton growth derides
ing to wilde. Thou therefore now advise

Our taſk we chooſe, what wonder
Looks intervene and ſmiles, or obj
Caſual diſcourſe draw on, which in
Our days work brought to little, t
Early, and th'hour of ſupper come

To whom mild anſwer Adam th
Sole Eve, aſſociate ſole, to me be
Compare above all living creatures
Well haſt thou motion'd, well thy
How we might beſt fulfil the work
God hath aſſign'd us, nor of me ſh
Unprais'd: for nothing lovelier ca
In woman, than to ſtudie houſhol
And good works in her huſband t
Yet not ſo ſtrictly hath our Lord im
Labour, as to debar us when we n

Theſe paths and bowers doubt not but our joint
Will keep from wilderneſs with eaſe, as wide
As we need walk, till younger hands ere long
Aſſiſt us: but if much converſe perhaps
Thee ſatiate, to ſhort abſence I could yield.
For ſolitude ſometimes is beſt ſocietie,
And ſhort retirement urges ſweet return.
But other doubt poſſeſſes me, leaſt harm
Befall thee ſever'd from me; for thou know'ſt
What hath been warn'd us, what malicious foe
Envying our happineſs, and of his own
Deſpairing, ſeeks to work us woe and ſhame
By ſly aſſault; and ſomewhere nigh at hand
Watches, no doubt, with greedy hope to find
His wiſh and beſt advantage, us aſunder,
Hopeleſs to circumvent us join'd, where each
To other ſpeedie aid might lend at need;
Whether his firſt deſign be to withdraw
Our fealtie from God, or to diſturb
Conjugal love, than which perhaps no bliſs
Enjoy'd by us excites his envie more;
Or this, or worſe, leave not the faithful ſide
That gave thee being, ſtill ſhades thee and protect
The wife, where danger or diſhonour lurks,
Safeſt and ſeemlieſt by her huſband ſtaies,
Who guards her, or with her the worſt endures.
To whom the virgin majeſtie of Eve,
As one who loves, and ſome unkindneſs meets,
With ſweet auſtere compoſure thus reply'd.
Off-ſpring of heav'n and earth, and all earth's
That ſuch an enemie we have, who ſeeks

May tempt it, I expected not to he
His violence thou fearſt not, being
As we, not capable of death or pai
Can either not receave, or can repe
His fraud is then thy fear, which pl
Thy equal fear that my firm faith a
Can by his fraud be ſhak'n or ſeduc'
Thoughts, which how found they ha
Adam, miſsthought of her to thee ſo
To whom with healing words Adar
Daughter of God and man, immorta
For ſuch thou art, from ſin and blam
Not diffident of thee do I diſſuade
Thy abſence from my ſight, but to av
Th'attempt itſelf, intended by our foe.
For he who tempts, though in vain, a
The tempte

alice and falſe guile contemn;
muſt be, who could ſeduce
nk ſuperfluous others aid.
ence of thy looks receave
vertue, in thy ſight
e watchful, ſtronger, if need were
ngth; while ſhame, thou looking on,
ercome or over-reacht
vigour raiſe, and rais'd unite.
ot thou like ſenſe within thee feel
ſent, and thy trial chooſe
witneſs of thy virtue tri'd.
oſtic Adam in his care
al love; but Eve, who thought
to her faith ſincere,
with accent ſweet renew'd.
condition, thus to dwell
it ſtrait'n'd by a foe,
we not endu'd
defence, wherever met,
ppie, ſtill in fear of harm?
des not ſin: only our foe
nts us with his foul eſteem
e: his foul eſteem
our on our front, but turns
; then wherefore ſhun'd or fear'd
her double honour gain
e prov'd falſe, find peace within,
av'n, our witneſs from th'event,
th, love, vertue unaſſaid
exterior help ſuſtain'd?

Let us not then ſuſpect our happie ſtate
Left ſo imperfect by the maker wiſe,
As not ſecure to ſingle or combin'd.
Frail is our happineſs, if this be ſo,
And Eden were no Eden thus expos'd.

To whom thus Adam fervently repli'd.
O woman, beſt are all things as the will
Of God ordain'd them, his creating hand
Nothing imperfect or deficient left
Of all that he created, much leſs man,
Or aught that might his happie ſtate ſecure,
Secure from outward force; within himſelf
The danger lies, yet lies within his power:
Againſt his will he can receave no harm.
But God left free the will, for what obeys
Reaſon, is free, and reaſon he made right,
But bid her well beware, and ſtill erect,

thy obedience; th'other who can know,
eeing thee attempted, who attest?
thou think, trial unsought may find
th securer than thus warn'd thou seemst,
for thy stay, not free, absents thee more;
thy native innocence, relie
hat thou hast of virtue, summon all,
od towards thee hath done his part, do thine.
spake the patriarch of mankind, but Eve
ted, yet submiss, though last, repli'd.
th thy permission then, and thus forwarn'd
y by what thy own last reasoning words
h'd only, that our trial, when least sought,
find us both perhaps far less prepar'd,
villinger I goe, nor much expect
so proud will first the weaker seek;
nt, the more shall shame him his repulse.
saying, from her husband's hand her hand
he withdrew, and like a wood-nymph light
l or Dryad, or of Delia's train
k her to the groves, but Delia's self
e surpass'd and goddess-like deport,
gh not as she with bow and quiver arm'd,
ith such gard'ning tools as art yet rude,
es of fire had form'd, or angels brought.
les, or Pomona, thus adorn'd,
st she seem'd, Pomona when she fled
mnus, or to Ceres in her prime,
rgin of Proserpina from Jove.
ng with ardent look his eye pursu'd
ited, but desiring more her stay.

Of thy preſum'd return? event perverſe!
Thou never from that hour in Paradiſe
Foundſt either ſweet repaſt, or ſound re
Such ambuſh hid among ſweet flours and
Waited with helliſh rancour imminent
To intercept thy way, or ſend thee back
Deſpoil'd of innocence, of faith, of bliſs
For now, and ſince firſt break of dawne
Meer ſerpent in appearance, forth was
And on his queſt, where likeliеſt he mi
The only two of mankind, but in them
The whole included race, his purpos'd
In bowrs and field he ſought, where an
Of grove or garden plot more pleaſant
Their tendance or plantation for delight,
By fountain or by ſhadie rivulet
He ſought them both, but wish'd his ha

g drooping unſuſtain'd, them ſhe upſtaies
tly with mirtle hand, mindleſs the while,
elf, though faireſt unſupported flour,
n her beſt prop ſo far, and ſtorm ſo nigh.
rer he drew, and many a walk travers'd
tateſieſt covert, cedar, pine, or palme,
n voluble and bold, now hid, now ſeen
ong thick woven arborets and flours
border'd on each bank, the hand of Eve:
t more delicious than thoſe gardens feign'd
of reviv'd Adonis, or renown'd
inous, hoſt of old Laertes ſon,
that, not myſtic, where the ſapient king
d dalliance with his fair Egyptian ſpouſe.
ch he the place admir'd, the perſon more.
one who long in populous city pent,
iere houſes thick and ſewers annoy the air,
th iſſuing on a ſummer's morn to breath
iong the pleaſant villages and farmes
join'd, from each thing met conceaves delight,
e ſmell of grain, or tedded graſs, or kine,
dairie, each rural ſight, each rural ſound;
:hance with nymphlike ſtep fair virgin paſs,
iat pleaſing ſeem'd, for her now pleaſes more,
: moſt, and in her look ſumms all delight.
:h pleaſure took the ſerpent to behold
is flourie plat, the ſweet recess of Eve
ius earlie, thus alone; her heav'nly form
igelic, but more ſoft, and feminine,
:r graceful innocence, her every air
geſture or leaſt action overaw'd

His malice, and with rapine ſweet bereav'd
His fierceneſs of the fierce intent it brought:
That ſpace the evil one abſtracted ſtood
From his own evil, and for the time remain'd
Stupidly good, of enmitie diſarm'd,
Of guile, of hate, of envie, of revenge;
But the hot hell that always in him burns,
Though in mid heav'n, ſoon ended his delight,
And tortures him now more, the more he ſees
Of pleaſure not for him ordain'd: then ſoon
Fierce hate he recollects, and all his thoughts
Of miſchief, gratulating, thus excites.
Thoughts, whither have ye led me, with what
Compulſion thus tranſported to forget
What hither brought us, hate, not love, nor hop
Of Paradiſe for hell, hope here to taſte
Of pleaſure, but all pleaſure to deſtroy,
what is in deſtroying, other joy
let me not let paſs

der ſhew of love well feign'd,
› her ruin now I tend.

emie of mankind, enclos'd
: bad, and toward Eve
, not with indented wave,
nd, as ſince, but on his rear,
ing foulds, that tour'd
a ſurging maze, his head
carbuncle his eyes;
k of verdant gold, erect
g ſpires, that on the graſs
: pleaſing was his ſhape,
r ſince of ſerpent kind
e that in Illyria chang'd
dmus, or the god
or to which tranſform'd
or Capitoline was ſeen,
s, this with her who bore
of Rome. With tract oblique
ho ſought acceſs, but fear'd
e-long he works his way.
y ſkilful ſtearſman wrought
h or foreland, where the wind
ſo ſteers, and ſhifts her ſail;
of his tortuous train
unton wreath in ſight of Eve,
ſhe buſied heard the ſound
but minded not, as us'd
:fore her through the field,
; more duteous at her call,
:all the herd diſguis'd.

He boulder now, uncall'd before her ſtood;
But as in gaze admiring: oft he bow'd
His turret creſt, and ſleek enamel'd neck,
Fawning, and lick'd the ground whereon ſhe trod.
His gentle dumb expreſſion turn'd at length
The eye of Eve to mark his play; he glad
Of her attention gain'd, with ſerpent tongue
Organic, or impulſe of vocal air,
His fraudulent temptation thus began.

Wonder not, ſovran miſtreſs, if perhaps
Thou canſt, who art ſole wonder, much leſs arm
Thy looks, the heav'n of mildneſs, with diſdain,
Diſpleas'd that I approach thee thus, and gaze
Inſatiate, I thus ſingle, nor have fear'd
Thy awful brow, more awful thus retir'd.
Faireſt reſemblance of thy maker faire,
Thee all things living gaze on, all things thine
By gift, and thy celeſtial beauty adore

By tongue of brute, and human ſenſe expreſt?
The firſt at leaſt of theſe I thought deni'd
To beaſts, whom God on their creation day
Created mute to all articulate ſound;
The latter I demurre, for in their looks
Much reaſon, and in their actions oft appears.
Thee, ſerpent, ſubtleſt beaſt of all the field
I knew, but not with human voice endu'd;
Redouble then this miracle, and ſay,
How cam'ſt thou ſpeakable of mute, and how
To me ſo friendly grown above the reſt
Of brutal kind, that daily are in ſight?
Say, for ſuch wonder claims attention due.

To whom the guileful tempter thus reply'd.
Empreſs of this fair world, reſplendent Eve,
Eaſie to me it is to tell thee all
What thou commandſt, and right thou ſhouldſt be obey
I was at firſt as other beaſts that graze
The trodden herb, of abject thoughts and low,
As was my food, nor aught but food diſcern'd
Or ſex, and apprehended nothing high:
Till on a day roaving the field I chanc'd
A goodly tree far diſtant to behold
Loaden with fruit of faireſt colours mixt,
Ruddie and gold: I nearer drew to gaze;
When from the boughs a ſavorie odour blow'n,
Grateful to appetite, more pleas'd my ſenſe
Than ſmell of ſweeteſt fenel, or the teats
Of ewe or goat a dropping with milk at eev'n,
Unſuckt of lamb or kid, that tend their play.
To ſatisfie the ſharp deſire I had

Of taſting thoſe fair apples, I reſolv'd
Not to defer; hunger and thirſt at once,
Powerful perſuaders, quickn'd at the ſcent
Of that alluring fruit, urg'd me ſo keene.
About the moſſie trunk I wound me ſoon,
For high from ground the branches would requir
Thy utmoſt reach or Adam's: round the tree
All other beaſt that ſaw, with like deſire
Longing and envying ſtood, but could not reach
Amid the tree now got, where plentie hung
Tempting ſo nigh, to pluck and eat my fill
I ſpar'd not, for ſuch pleaſure till that hour
At feed or fountain never had I found.
Sated at length, ere long I might perceave
Strange alteration in me, to degree
Of reaſon in my inward powers, and ſpeech
Wanted not long, though to this ſhape retain'd.

The vertue of that fruit, in thee first prov'd:
But say, where grows the tree, from hence how far?
For many are the trees of God that grow
In Paradise, and various, yet unknown
To us, in such abundance lies our choice,
As leaves a greater store of fruit untouch't,
Still hanging incorruptible, till men
Grow up to their provision, and more hands
Help to disburden nature of her burthen.
To whom the wilie adder, blithe and glad.
Empress, the way is ready, and not long,
Beyond a row of myrtles, on a flat,
Fast by a fountain, one small thicket past
Of blowing myrrh and balme; if thou accept
My conduct, I can bring thee thither soon.
Lead then, said Eve. He leading swiftly rowl'd
In tangles, and made intricate seem strait,
To mischief swift. Hope elevates, and joy
Brightens his crest, as when a wandring fire,
Compact of unctuous vapor, which the night
Condenses, and the cold environs round,
Kindl'd through agitation to a flame,
Which oft, they say, some evil spirit attends,
Hovering and blazing with delusive light,
Misleads th'amaz'd night-wanderer from his way
To bogs and mires, and oft through pond or poo!,
There swallow'd up and lost, from succour far.
So glister'd the dire snake, and into fraud
Led Eve our credulous mother, to the tree
Of prohibition, root of all our woe;
Which when she saw, thus to her guide she spake.

Sole daughter of his voice ; the rest
Law to ourſelves, our reaſon is our
To whom the tempter guilefully
Indeed ? hath God then ſaid that of
Of all theſe garden trees ye ſhall not
Yet lords declar'd of all in earth or
To whom thus Eve yet ſinleſs.
Of each tree in the garden we may
But of the fruit of this fair tree am
The garden, God hath ſaid, ye ſha
Thereof, nor ſhall ye touch it, leſt
She ſcarce had ſaid, though brief,
The tempter, but with ſhew of ze
To man, and indignation at his wr
New part puts on, and as to paſſi
Fluctuats diſturb'd, yet comely, a
Rais'd, as of ſome great matter to

The tempter all impaſſion'd thus began.
O ſacred, wiſe, and wiſedom-giving plant,
Mother of ſcience, now I feel thy power.
Within me cleere, not only to diſcern
Things in their cauſes, but to trace the wayes
Of higheſt agents, deem'd however wiſe.
Queen of this univerſe, do not believe
Thoſe rigid threats of death; ye ſhall not die:
How ſhould ye? by the fruit? it gives you life
To knowledge? by the threatner, look on me,
Me who have touch'd and taſted, yet both live,
And life more perfect have attain'd than fate
Meant me, by ventring higher than my lot.
Shall that be ſhut to man, which to the beaſt
Is open? or will God incenſe his ire
For ſuch a petty treſpaſs, and not praiſe
Rather your dauntleſs virtue, whom the pain
Of death denounc't, whatever thing death be,
Deterr'd not from atchieving what might lead
To happier life, knowledge of good and evil;
Of good, how juſt? of evil, if what is evil
Be real, why not known, ſince eaſier ſhunn'd?
God therefore cannot hurt ye, and be juſt;
Not juſt, not God; not fear'd then, nor obey'd:
Your fear itſelf of death removes the fear.
Why then was this forbid? why but to awe,
Why but to keep ye low and ignorant,
His worſhippers; he knows that in the day
Ye eat thereof, your eyes that ſeem ſo cleere,
Yet are but dim, ſhall perfectly be then
Open'd and cleer'd, and ye ſhall be as gods,

Though threat'n'd, which no worſe tha
And what are gods that man may not b
As they, participating god-like food?
The gods are firſt, and that advantage
On our belief, that all from them proc
I queſtion it, for this fair earth I ſee,
Warm'd by the ſun, producing every k
Them nothing: if they all things, wh
Knowledge of good and evil in this tre
That whoſo eats thereof, forthwith att
Wiſdom without their leave? and whe
Th'offence, that man ſhould thus atta
What can your knowledge hurt him, c
Impart againſt his will if all be his?
Or is it envie, or can envie dwell
In heav'nly breaſts? theſe, theſe and m
Cauſes import your need of this fair fr

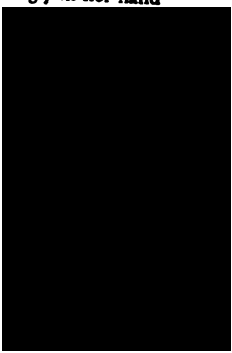
appetite, rais'd by the ſmell
of that fruit, which with deſire,
now grown to touch or taſte,
ıer longing eye; yet firſt
while, thus to herſelf ſhe mus'd
re thy virtues, doubtleſs, beſt of fruits,
ept from man, and worthy to be admir'd,
le too long forborn, at firſt aſſay
ution to the mute, and taught
ıe not made for ſpeech to ſpeak thy praiſe:
: he alſo who forbids thy uſe,
not from us, naming thee the tree
ıdge, knowledge both of good and evil;
: then to taſte, but his forbidding
s the more, while it inferrs the good
mmunicated, and our want;
nknown, ſure is not had, or had
nknown, is as not had at all.
ıen, what forbids he but to know,
good, forbids us to be wiſe?
ibitions bind not. But if death
ith after bands, what profits then
d freedom? in the day we eat
ir fruit, our doom is, we ſhall die.
the ſerpent? he hath eat'n and lives,
s, and ſpeaks, and reaſons, and diſcernes,
till then. For us alone
: invented? or to us deni'd
eſtual food, for beaſts reſerv'd?
it ſeems: yet that one beaſt which firſt
d, envies not, but brings with joy

The good befall'n him, author unſuſpect,
Friendly to man, far from deceit or guile.
What fear I then, rather what know to fear
Under this ignorance of good and evil,
Of God or death, of law or penaltie?
Here grows the cure of all, this fruit divine,
Fair to the eye, inviting to the taſte,
Of vertue to make wiſe: what hinders then
To reach, and feed at once both bodie and mind?

So ſaying, her raſh hands in evil hour
Forth reaching to the fruit, ſhe pluck'd, ſhe eat:
Earth felt the wound, and nature from her ſeat
Sighing through all her works gave ſigns of woe,
That all was loſt. Back to the thicket ſlunk
The guiltie ſerpent, and well might, for Eve
Intent now wholly on her taſte, naught elſe
Regarded, ſuch delight till then, as ſeem'd,
In fruit ſhe never taſted, whether true

f thy full branches offer'd free to all;
ill dieted by thee I grow mature
n knowledge, as the gods who all things know;
hough others envie what they cannot give;
or had the gift been theirs, it had not here
hus grown. Experience, next to thee I owe,
eſt guide; not following thee, I had remain'd
n ignorance, thou op'n'ſt wiſdom's way,
nd giv'ſt acceſs, though ſecret ſhe retire.
nd I perhaps am ſecret; heav'n is high,
igh and remote to ſee from thence diſtinct
ach thing on earth; and other care perhaps
ay have diverted from continual watch
ur great forbidder, ſafe with all his ſpies
bout him. But to Adam in what ſort
hall I appeer? ſhall I to him make known
s yet my change, and give him to partake
ull happineſs with me, or rather not,
ut keep the odds of knowledge in my power
Vithout copartner? ſo to add what wants
n femal ſex, the more to draw his love,
nd render me more equal, and perhaps,
thing not undeſirable, ſometime
uperior; for inferior who is free?
his may be well: but what if God have ſeen,
nd death enſue? then I ſhall be no more,
nd Adam wedded to another Eve,
hall live with her enjoying, I extinct;
death to think. Confirm'd then I reſolve,
dam ſhall ſhare with me in bliſs or woe:
o dear I love him, that with him all deaths

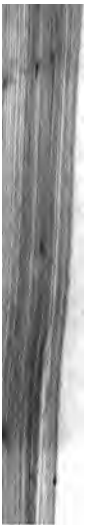
: him live no life.
ree her ſteps ſhe turn'd,
one, as to the power
ſe preſence had infus'd
ıp, deriv'd
ods. Adam the while
urn, had wove
and to adorn
l labours crown
their harveſt queen.
his thoughts, and new
long delay'd;
of ſomething ill,
ltring meaſure felt;
ent, the way ſhe took
y parted; by the tree
ıſs, there he her met,
ning; in her hand



nor to evil unknown
but of divine effect
d make them gods who taſte ;
ted ſuch : the ſerpent wiſe,
is we, or not obeying,
fruit, and is become,
are threatn'd, but thenceforth
an voice and human ſenſe,
ion, and with me
ſo prevail'd, that I
and have alſo found
ſpond, opner mine eyes,
d ſpirits, ampler heart,
o godhead ; which for thee
without thee can deſpiſe :
haſt part, to me is bliſs,
l with thee, and odious ſoon.
ſo taſte, that equal lot
al joy, as equal love ;
ting, different degree
then too late renounce
hen fate will not permit.
count'nance blithe her ſtorie told ;
diſtemper flushing glow'd.
Adam, ſoon as he heard
done by Eve, amaz'd,
d blank, while horror chill
veins, and all his joints relax'd ;
nd the garland wreath for Eve
d all the faded roſes ſhed :
d and pale, till thus at length

inward silence broke.
ion, laſt and beſt
, creature in whom excell'd
ight or thought be form'd,
, amiable, or ſweet!
how on a ſudden loſt,
and now to death devote?
ou yielded to tranſgreſs
nce, how to violate
rbidd'n! ſome curſed fraud
uil'd thee, yet unknown,
ath ruin'd, for with thee
ion is to die;
hout thee, how foregoe
and love ſo dearly join'd,
eſe wilde woods forlorn?
another Eve, and I
yet loſs of thee
my heart; no no, I feel
draw me: fleſh of fleſh,

But paſt who can recall, or done undoe ?
Not God Omnipotent, nor fate, yet ſo
Perhaps thou ſhalt not die, perhaps the fact
Is not ſo hainous now, foretaſted fruit,
Profan'd firſt by the ſerpent, by him firſt
Made common and unhallow'd ere our taſte ;
Nor yet on him found deadly, he yet lives,
Lives, as thou ſaidſt, and gaines to live as man
Higher degree of life, inducement ſtrong
To us, as likely taſting to attain
Proportional aſcent, which cannot be
But to be gods, or angels demi-gods.
Nor can I think that God, creator wiſe,
Though threatning, will in earneſt ſo deſtroy
Us his prime creatures, dignifi'd ſo high,
Set over all his works, which in our fall,
For us created, needs with us muſt faile.
Dependent made ; ſo God ſhall uncreate,
Be fruſtrate, do, undo, and labour loſe,
Not well conceav'd of God, who though his Power
Creation could repeate, yet would be loath
Us to aboliſh, leaſt the adverſary
Triumph and ſay ; Fickle their ſtate whom God
Moſt favours, who can pleaſe him long ? me firſt
He ruin'd, now mankind ; whom will he next ?
Matter of ſcorn, not to be given the foe,
However I with thee have fixt my lot,
Certain to undergoe like doom, if death
Confort with thee, death is to me as life ;
So forcible within my heart I feel
The bond of nature draw me to my own,



Ingaging me to emulate, but a
Of thy perfection, how shall I
Adam, from whose dear side I
And gladly of our union hear t
One heart, one soul in both; w
This day affords, declaring thee
Rather than death or aught tha
Shall separate us, linkt in love a
To undergoe with me one guilt,
If any be, of tasting this fair fr
Whose vertue, for of good still
Direct, or by occasion hath pres
This happie trial of thy love, w
So eminently never had been kn
Were it I thought death menac'
This my attempt, I would sustai
The worst, and not persuade thee
Deserted, than oblige thee with a
Pernicious to thy peace, chiefly a
Remarkably so late of thy so tend

On my experience, Adam, freely taſte,
And fear of death deliver to the winds.
So ſaying, ſhe embrac'd him, and for joy
Tenderly wept, much won that he his love
Had ſo ennobl'd, as of choice to incur
Divine diſpleaſure for her ſake, or death.
In recompence (for ſuch compliance bad
Such recompence beſt merits) from the bough
She gave him of that fair enticing fruit
With liberal hand: he ſcrupl'd not to eat
Againſt his better knowledge, not deceav'd,
But fondly overcome with femal charm.
Earth trembl'd from her entrails, as again
In pangs, and nature gave a ſecond groan,
Skie lowr'd, and muttering thunder, ſome ſad drops
Wept at compleating of the mortal ſin
Original; while Adam took no thought,
Eating his fill, nor Eve to iterate
Her former treſpaſs fear'd, the more to ſooth
Him with her lov'd ſocietie, that now
As with new wine intoxicated both
They ſwim in mirth, and fancie that they feel
Divinitie within them breeding wings
Wherewith to ſcorn the earth: but that falſe fruit
Far other operation firſt diſplai'd,
Carnal deſire enflaming, he on Eve
Began to caſt laſcivious eyes, ſhe him
As wantonly repai'd; in luſt they burn:
Till Adam thus 'gan Eve to dalliance move.
Eve, now I ſee thou art exact of taſte,
And elegant, of ſapience no ſmall part,

In things to us forbidden, it might be will
For this one tree had been forbidden ten.
But come, ſo well refreſh't, now let us p
As meet is, after ſuch delicious fare ;
For never did thy beautie ſince the day
I ſaw thee firſt and wedded thee, adorn'c
With all perfections, ſo enflame my ſens
With ardor to enjoy thee, fairer now
Than ever, bountie of this vertuous tree.

So ſaid he, and forbore not glance or
Of amorous intent, well underſtood
Of Eve, whoſe eye darted contagious fir
Her hand he ſeis'd, and to a ſhadie bank,
Thick overhead with verdant roof imbow
He led her nothing loath ; flours were th
Panſies, and violets, and aſphodel,
And hyacinths, earth's freſheſt ſofteſt lay
There they their fill of love and loves di
Took largely, of their mutual guilt the ſe
The ſolace of their ſin, till dewie ſleep

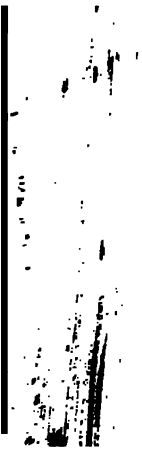
of unkindly fumes, with conſcious dreams
umber'd, now had left them, up they roſe
rom unreſt, and each the other viewing,
found their eyes now op'n'd, and their minds
dark'n'd; innocence, that as a veile
ſhadow'd them from knowing ill, was gone,
confidence, and native righteouſneſs,
honour from about them, naked left
guiltie ſhame he cover'd, but his robe
over'd more. So roſe the Danite ſtrong
ulean Samſon from the harlot lap
Philiſtean Dalilah, and wak'd
rn of his ſtrength, they deſtitute and bare
all their vertue: ſilent, and in face
founded long they ſate, as ſtruck'n mute,
Adam, though not leſs than Eve abaſht,
ength gave utterance to theſe words conſtrain'd.
Eve, in evil hour thou didſt give ear
that falſe worm, of whomſoever taught
counterfeit man's voice, true in our fall,
e in our promis'd riſing; ſince our eyes
n'd we find indeed, and find we know
good and evil, good loſt, and evil got,
fruit of knowledge, if this be to know,
ich leaves us naked thus, of honour void,
nnocence, of faith, of puritie,
wonted ornaments now ſoil'd and ſtain'd,
l in our faces evident the ſigns
foul concupiſcence; whence evil ſtore;
n ſhame, the laſt of evils; of the firſt
ſure then. How ſhall I behold the face

To ſtar or ſun-light, ſpread the
And brown as eevening: cove
Ye cedars, with innumerable b
Hide me, where I may never ſe
But let us now, as in bad plight
What beſt may * for the preſent
The parts of each from other, t
To ſhame obnoxious, and unſee
Some tree Whoſe broad ſmooth l
And girded on our loyns, may co
Thoſe middle parts, that this new
There fit not, and reproach us as

So counſel'd he, and both toge
Into the thickeſt wood, there ſoo
The figtree, not that kind for fruit
But ſuch as at this day to Indians
In Malabar or Decan ſpreads her a
Branching ſo broad and long, that
The bending twigs take root, and
About the mother-tree, a pillar'd ſh
High overarch'd

And with what ſkill they had, together ſow'd,
To gird their waſte, vain covering, if to hide
Their guilt and dreaded ſhame; O how unlike
To that firſt naked glorie. Such of late
Columbus found th'American ſo girt
With feather'd cincture, naked elſe and wild
Among the trees on iſles and woodie ſhores.
Thus fenc't, and as they thought, their ſhame in part
Cover'd, but not at reſt or eaſe of mind,
They ſat them down to weep, nor only tears
Rain'd at their eyes, but high winds worſe within
Began to riſe, high paſſions, anger, hate,
Miſtruſt, ſuſpicion, diſcord, and ſhook ſore
Their inward ſtate of mind, calm region once
And full of peace, now toſt and turbulent:
For underſtanding rul'd not, and the will
Heard not her lore, both in ſubjection now
To ſenſual appetite, who from beneath
Uſurping over ſovran reaſon claim'd
Superior ſway: from thus diſtemper'd breaſt,
Adam, eſtrang'd in look and alter'd ſtile,
Speech intermitted thus to Eve renew'd.

Would thou hadſt hearkn'd to my words, and ſtai'd
With me, as I beſought thee, when that ſtrange
Deſire of wandring this unhappie morn,
I know not whence poſſeſs'd thee; we had then
Remain'd ſtill happie, not as now, deſpoil'd
Of all our good, ſham'd, naked, miſerable.
Let none henceforth ſeek needleſs cauſe to approve
The faith they owe; when earneſtly they ſeek
Such proof, conclude, they then begin to fail.



Or here th'attempt, thou coul
Fraud in the ſerpent, ſpeaking
No ground of enmitie betwe
Why he ſhould mean me ill, o
Was I to have never parted f
As good have grown there ſtill
Being as I am, why didſt not
Command me abſolutely not t
Going into ſuch danger as thou
Too facil then thou didſt not
Nay, didſt permit, approve, a
Hadſt thou been firm and fix
Neither had I tranſgreſs'd, nor

To whom then firſt incenſt
Is this the love, is this the reco
Of mine to thee, ingrateful Ev
Immutable when thou wert lo

And force upon free will hath here no place.
But confidence then bore thee on, ſecure
Either to meet no danger, or to find
Matter of glorious trial; and perhaps
I alſo err'd in overmuch admiring
What ſeem'd in thee ſo perfect, that I thought
No evil durſt attempt thee, but I rue
That errour now, which is become my crime,
And thou th'accuſer. Thus it ſhall befall
Him who to worth in women overtruſting
Lets her will rule; reſtraint ſhe will not brook
And left to herſelf, if evil thence enſue,
She firſt his weak indulgence will accuſe.
Thus they in mutual accuſation ſpent
The fruitleſs hours, but neither ſelf-condemning,
And of their vain conteſt appear'd no end.

The End of the Ninth Book.

MEANWHILE the
Of Satan done
He in the ſerpent, had p
Her huſband ſhe, to tak
Was known in heav'n;
Of God all-ſeeing, or d
Omniſcient, who in all t
Hinder'd not Satan to att
Of man, with ſtrength
Complete to have diſcover
Whatever wiles of foe or
For ſtill they knew, and o
The high injunction not t
Whoever tempted; which
Incurr'd, what could they l
And manifold in ſin, deſerv
Up into heav'n from Parad

ethereal people ran, to hear and know
v all befell: they towards the throne supream
ountable made haste to make appear
h righteous plea, their utmost vigilance,
l easily approv'd; when the most high
nal Father from his secret cloud,
idst in thunder utter'd thus his voice.

ssembl'd angels, and ye powers return'd
m unsuccessful charge, be not dismaid,
troubl'd at these tidings from the earth,
ich your sincerest eyes could not prevent,
told so lately what should come to pass,
en first this tempter cross'd the gulph from hell.
ld ye then he should prevail and speed
his bad errand, man should be seduc't
flatter'd out of all, believing lies
inst his Maker; no decree of mine
ncurring to necessitate his fall,
touch with lightest moment of impulse
free will, to her own inclining left
even scale. But fall'n he is, and now
at rests, but that the mortal sentence pass
his transgression, death denounc't that day,
ich he presumes already vain and void,
suffer not yet inflicted, as he fear'd,
some immediate stroke; but soon shall find
bearance no acquittance ere day end.
ice shall not return as bountie scorn'd.
whom send I to judge them? whom but thee
egerent son, to thee I have transferr'd
judgment, whether in heav'n, or earth, or hell.

...the Father, and ur
Toward the right hand his glo
Blaz'd forth unclouded Deitie ;
Refplendent all his Father man
Expreſs'd, and thus divinely an
Father eternal, thine is to dec
Mine both in heav'n and earth
Supream, that thou in me thy ſ
Mayſt ever reſt well pleas'd. I
On earth theſe thy tranſgreſſors,
Whoever judg'd, the worſt on r
When time ſhall be, for ſo I un
Before thee ; and not repenting,
Of right, that I may mitigate th
On me deriv'd, yet I ſhall temper
Juſtice with mercie, as may illuſt
Them fully ſatisfied, and thee ap
Attendance none ſhall need, nor t
Are to behold the judgment, but
Thoſe two ; the third beſt abſent
Convict by flight, ...

ınd all the coaſt in proſpect lay.
he deſcended ſtrait; the ſpeed of Gods
counts not, though with ſwifteſt minutes wing'd.
was the ſun in weſtern cadence low
noon, and gentle aires due at their hour
ı the earth now wak'd, and uſher in
ıvning coole when he from wrauth more coole
the mild judge and intercеſſor both
tence man: the voice of God they heard
walking in the garden, by ſoft windes
ht to their ears, while day declin'd, they heard,
rom his preſence hid themſelves among
ickeſt trees, both man and wife, till God
achifig, thus to Adam call'd aloud.
ere art thou Adam, wont with joy to meet
ming ſeen far off? I miſs thee here,
leas'd, thus entertain'd with ſolitude,
ı obvious dutie erewhile appear'd unſaught:
me I leſs conſpicuous, or what change
ts thee, or what chance detains? come forth.
ne, and with him Eve, more loth, though firſt
end, diſcount'nanc't both, and diſcompos'd;
was not in their looks, either to God
each other, but apparent guilt,
ıame, and perturbation, and deſpair,
, and obſtinacie, and hate, and guile.
ce Adam faultring long, thus anſwer'd brief.
ard thee in the garden, and of thy voice
l, being naked, hid myſelf. To whom
racious judge without revile repli'd.
voice thou oft haſt heard, and haſt not fear'd.

Before my judge, either to und
Myſelf the total crime, or to a
My other ſelf, the partner of n
Whoſe failing, while her faith t
I ſhould conceal, and not expoſ
By my complaint; but ſtrict ne
Subdues me, and calamitous co
Leaſt on my head both ſin and j
However inſupportable, be all
Devolv'd; though ſhould I hold
Would eaſily detect what I co
This woman whom thou mad'ſt
And gav'ſt me as thy perfect g
So [illegible]o acceptable, ſo divine,
That from her hand I could ſuſp
And what ſhe did, whatever in
Her doing ſeem'd to juſtifie the
She gave me of the tree, and I

To whom the ſovran preſenc
Was ſhe thy God, that her tho

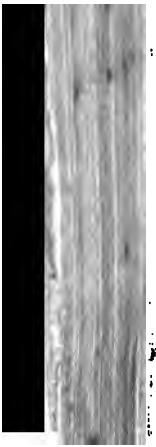
Her's in all real dignitie: adorn'd
She was indeed, and lovely to attract
Thy love, not thy ſubjection, and her gifts
Were ſuch as under government well ſeem'd,
Unſeemly to bear rule, which was thy part
And perſon, hadſt thou known thyſelf aright.
So having ſaid, he thus to Eve in few:
Say woman, what is this which thou haſt done?
To whom ſad Eve with ſhame nigh overwhelm'd,
Confeſſing ſoon, yet not before her judge
Bold or loquacious, thus abaſht repli'd.
The ſerpent me beguil'd and I did eat.
Which when the Lord God heard, without delay
To judgement he proceeded on th'accus'd
Serpent though brute, unable to transfer
The guilt on him who made him inſtrument
Of miſchief, and polluted from the end
Of his creation; juſtly then accurſt,
As vitiated in nature: more to know
Concern'd not man (ſince he no further knew),
Nor alter'd his offence; yet God at laſt
To Satan firſt in ſin his doom apply'd,
Though in myſterious terms, judg'd as then beſt:
And on the ſerpent thus his curſe let fall.
Becauſe thou haſt done this, thou art accurſt
Above all cattel, each beaſt of the field;
Upon thy belly groveling thou ſhalt goe,
And duſt ſhalt eat all the days of thy life.
Between thee and the woman I will put
Enmitie, and between thine and her ſeed;
Her ſeed ſhall bruiſe thy head, thou bruiſe his heel.

Captivity led captive through the air,
The realm itself of Satan long usurpt,
Whom he shall tread at last under our feet
Even he who now foretold his fatal bruise,
And to the woman thus his sentence turn'd.
Thy sorrow I will greatly multiply
By thy conception; children thou shalt bring
In sorrow forth, and to thy husband's will
Thine shall submit, he over thee shall rule.
On Adam last thus judgment he pronounc'd,
Because thou hast hearkn'd to the voice of
And eaten of the tree concerning which
I charg'd thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat
Curs'd is the ground for thy sake, thou in
Shalt eat thereof all the days of thy life;
Thornes also and thistles it shall bring thee
Unbid, and thou shalt eat th'herb of the
In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bre
Till thou return into the ground, for th
Out of the ground wast taken, know thy

er change, disdain'd not to begin
rth the form of servant to assume,
he wash'd his servants feet, so now
r of his family he clad
kedness with skins of beasts, or slain,
s snake with youthful coat repaid;
ught not much to cloath his enemies:
heir outward only with the skins
s, but inward nakedness, much more
ious, with his robe of righteousness,
; cover'd from his father's sight.
with swift ascent he up return'd,
blissful bosom reassum'd
as of old, to him appeas'd
ugh all-knowing, what had past with man
ted, mixing intercession sweet.
ile ere thus was sinn'd and judg'd on earth,
the gates of hell sat, Sin and Death,
terview within the gates, that now
pen wide, belching outragious flame
Chaos, since the fiend pass'd through,
ning, who thus now to death began.
a, why sit we here each other viewing
hile Satan our great author thrives
r worlds, and happier seat provides,
his offspring deare? it cannot be
t success attends him; if mishap,
he had return'd, with fury driv'n
avengers, since no place like this
his punishment, or their revenge.
ke I feel new strength within me rise,

inſeparable muſt with me along:
For death from ſin no power can
But leaſt the difficulty of paſſing
Stay his return perhaps over this g
Impaſſable, impervious, let us try
Adventrous work, yet to thy pow
Not unagreeable, to found a path
Over this main from hell to that n
Where Satan now prevails, a mor
Of merit high to all th'infernal ho
Eaſing their paſſage hence, for inte
Or tranſmigration, as their lot ſhal
Nor can I miſs the way, ſo ſtrongl
By this new felt attraction and inſti

Whom thus the meagre ſhadow a
Goe whither fate and inclination ſt
Leads thee, I ſhall not lag behind,
The way, thou leading, ſuch a ſen
Of carnage, prey innumerable, an
The ſavour of death from all things



Now had they brought the
Pontifical, a ridge of pender
Over the vext abyſs, followi
Of Satan, to the ſelf ſame p
Firſt lighted from his wing,
From out of Chaos to the ou
Of this round world: with
And chains they made all fa
And durable; and now in
The confin[illegible] empyre
A[illegible] of this world, and on
With long reach interpos'd;
In ſight to each of theſe thre
And now their way to earth
To Paradiſe firſt tending wh
Satan in likeneſs of an ange
Betwixt the Centaure and t
His Zenith, while the ſun i

Vain covertures; but when he ſaw deſcend
The ſon of God to judge them, terrifi'd
He fled, not hoping to eſcape, but ſhun
The preſent, fearing guiltie what his wrauth
Might ſuddenly inflict; that paſt, return'd
By night, and liſtening where the hapleſs pair
Sat in their ſad diſcourſe, and various plaint,
Thence gather'd his own doom, which underſtood
Not inſtant, but of future time. With joy
And tidings fraught, to hell he now return'd,
And at the brink of Chaos, near the foot
Of this new wondrous pontifice, unhop'd
Met who to meet him came, his offspring deare.
Great joy was at their meeting, and at ſight
Of that ſtupendious bridge his joy encreas'd.
Long he admiring ſtood, till Sin, his faire
Inchanting daughter, thus the ſilence broke.

O parent, theſe are thy magnific deeds,
Thy trophies, which thou view'ſt as not thine own,
Thou art their author and prime architect:
For I no ſooner in my heart divin'd,
My heart, which by a ſecret harmonie
Still moves with thine, join'd in connexion ſweet,
That thou on earth hadſt proſper'd, which thy looks
Now alſo evidence, but ſtraight I felt
Though diſtant from thee worlds between, yet felt
That I muſt after thee with this thy ſon;
Such fatal conſequence unites us three:
Hell could no longer hold us in her bounds,
Nor this unvoyageable gulf obſcure
Detain from following thy illuſtrious track.

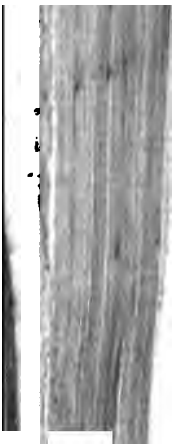
Thou haſt atchiev'd our libertie, confin'd
Within hell gates till now, thou us impow'rd
To fortifie thus far, and overlay
With this portentuous bridge the dark abyſs.
Thine now is all this world, thy vertue hath won
What thy hands builded not, thy wiſdom gain'd
With odds what war hath loſt, and fully aveng'd
Our foile in heav'n; here thou ſhalt monarch reign.
There didſt not; there let him ſtill victor ſway,
As battle hath adjudg'd, from this new world
Retiring, by his own doom alienated,
And henceforth monarchie with thee divide
Of all things parted by th'empyreal bounds,
His quadrature, from thy orbicular world,
Or trie thee now more dang'rous to his throne.

Whom thus the prince of darkneſs anſwer'd glad.
Fair daughter, and thou ſon and grandchild both,
High proof ye now have giv'n to be the race

dwell and reign in bliſs, thence on the earth
ion exerciſe and in the aire,
on man, ſole lord of all declar'd,
rſt make ſure your thrall, and laſtly kill.
ſtitutes I ſend ye, and create
tent on earth, of matchleſs might
from me: on your joynt vigor now
ld of this new kingdom all depends,
gh ſin to death expos'd by my exploit.
joynt power prevails, th'affairs of hell
riment need feare, goe and be ſtrong.
ying he diſmiſs'd them, they with ſpeed
ourſe through thickeſt conſtellations held
ing their bane; the blaſted ſtars lookt wan,
anets, planet ſtrook, real eclips
uffer'd. Th'other way Satan went down
uſey to hell gate; on either ſide
ed chaos over built exclaim'd,
ith rebounding ſurge the barrs aſſail'd,
orn'd his indignation: through the gate,
pen and unguarded, Satan paſs'd,
ll about ſound deſolate; for thoſe
nted to ſit there, had left their charge,
to the upper world; the reſt were all
the inland retir'd, about the walls
daemonium, citie and proud ſeat
cifer, ſo by alluſion call'd,
t bright ſtar to Satan paragon'd.
kept their watch the legions, while the grand
ncil ſate, ſollicitous what chance
intercept their emperor ſent, ſo he

To Tauris or Caſbegn. So th
Heav'n-baniſht hoſt, left deſ
Many a dark league, reduc't i
Round their metropolis, and
Each hour their great adventu
Of forrein worlds: he throug
In ſhew plebeian angel milita
Of loweſt order, paſt; and fr
Of that Plutonian hall, invifi
Aſcended his high throne, wh
Of richeſt texture ſpred, at th
Was plac't in regal luſtre. Do
He ſate, and round about hin
At laſt as from a cloud his ful
And ſhape ſtar-bright appear
With what permiſſive glorie
Was left him, or falſe glitter

or in poſſeſſion ſuch. not onely of right,
call ye and declare ye now, return'd
ucceſsful beyond hope, to lead ye forth
riumphant out of this infernal pit
bominable, accurſt, the houſe of woe,
nd dungeon of our tyrant: now poſſeſs,
s lords, a ſpacious world, to our native heaven
ttle inferiour, by my adventure hard
ith peril great atchiev'd. Long were to tell
hat I have done, what ſuffer'd, with what pain
oyag'd th'unreal, vaſt, unbounded deep
f horrible confuſion, over which
y ſin and death a broad way now is pav'd
o expedite your glorious march; but I
oil'd out my uncouth paſſage, forc't to ride
h'untractable abyſs, plung'd in the womb
f unoriginal night and chaos wilde,
hat jealous of their ſecrets fiercely oppos'd
ly journey ſtrange, with clamorous uproare
roteſting fate ſupreme; thence how I found
he new created world, which fame in heav'n
ong had foretold, a fabric wonderful
f abſolute perfection, therein man
lac't in a Paradiſe, by our exile
lade happie: him by fraud I have ſeduc'd
rom his creator, and the more to increaſe
our wonder, with an apple; he thereat
ffended, worth your laughter, hath giv'n up
oth his beloved man and all his world,
o ſin and death a prey, and ſo to us,
ithout our hazard, labour, or allarm,



Me and mankind ; I am
His ſeed, when is not ſet,
A world who would not
Or much more grievous p
Of my performance : wh
But up and enter now int

So having ſaid, a while
Their univerſal ſhout and
To fill his ear, when cont
On all ſides, from innume
A diſmal univerſal hiſs, th
Of public ſcorn ; he wond
Had leaſure, wondring at
His viſage drawn he felt to
His arms clung to his ribs,
Each other, till ſupplanted
A monſtrous ſerpent on hi

With complicated monſters head and tail,
Scorpion and aſp, and Amphiſbæna dire,
Ceraſtes horn'd, Hydrus, and Ellops drear,
And Dipſas (not ſo thick ſwarm'd once the ſoil
Bedropt with blood of Gorgon, or the iſle
Ophiuſa) but ſtill greateſt he the midſt,
Now dragon grown, larger than whom the ſun
Ingender'd in the Pythian vale on ſlime,
Huge Python, and his power no leſs he ſeem'd
Above the reſt ſtill to retain; they all
Him follow'd iſſuing forth to th'open field,
Where all yet left of that revolted rout
Heav'n-fall'n, in ſtation ſtood or juſt array,
Sublime with expectation when to ſee
In triumph iſſuing forth their glorious chief;
They ſaw, but other ſight inſtead, a crowd
Of ugly ſerpents; horror on them fell,
And horrid ſympathie; for what they ſaw,
They felt themſelves now changing; down their arms,
Down fell both ſpear and ſhield, down they as faſt,
And the dire hiſs renew'd, and the dire form
Catcht by contagion, like in puniſhment,
As in their crime. Thus was th'applauſe they meant,
Turn'd to exploding hiſs, triumph to ſhame
Caſt on themſelves from their own mouths. There ſtood
A grove hard by, ſprung up with this their change,
His will who reigns above, to aggravate
Their penance, laden with fruit, like that
Which grew in Paradiſe, the bait of Eve
Us'd by the tempter: on that proſpect ſtrange
Their earneſt eyes they fix'd, imagining

That curs'd Megæra: greedy
The frutage fair to fight, like
Near that bituminous lake wh
This more deluſive, not the t
Deceav'd; they fondly thinkin
Their appetite with guſt, inſte
Chew'd bitter aſhes, which t
With ſpattering noiſe rejected
Hunger and thirſt conſtraining,
With hatefulleſt diſreliſh writ
With ſoot and cinders fill'd;
Into the ſame illuſion, not as
Whom they triumph'd once lapſt
And worn with famine, long
Till their loſt ſhape, permitted,
Yearly enjoin'd, ſome ſay, to u
This annual humbling certain
To daſh their pride, and joy f
However ſome tradition they d
Among the heathen of their p

:an while in Paradiſe the helliſh pair
o ſoon arriv'd, Sin there in power before,
ice actual, now in body, and to dwell
bitual habitant; behind her death
)ſe following pace for pace, not mounted yet
i his pale horſe: to whom Sin thus began.
Second of Satan ſprung, all conquering Death,
hat think'ſt thou of our empire now, though earn'd
ith travail difficult, not better far
ian ſtill at hell's dark threſhold to have ſate watch,
inam'd, undreaded, and thyſelf half ſtarv'd?
Whom thus the ſin-born monſter anſwer'd ſoon.
me, who with eternal famine pine,
ike is hell, or paradiſe, or heaven,
ere beſt, where moſt with ravin I may meet;
hich here, though plenteous, all too little ſeems
ſtuff this maw, this vaſt unhide-bound corps.
To whom th'inceſtuous mother thus repli'd.
ou therefore on theſe herbs, and fruits, and flours
d firſt, on each beaſt next, and fiſh, and fowle,
homely morſels, and whatever thing
e ſithe of time mows down, devour unſpar'd,
l I in man reſiding through the race,
; thoughts, his looks, words, actions all infect,
d ſeaſon him thy laſt and ſweeteſt prey.
This ſaid, they both betook them ſeveral wayes,
th to deſtroy, or unimmortal make
kinds, and for deſtruction to mature
)ner or latter; which th'almightie ſeeing,
)m his tranſcendent ſeat the ſaints among,
thoſe bright orders utter'd thus his voice.

And his adherents, that with ſo much
I ſuffer them to enter and poſſeſs
A place ſo heav'nly, and conniving ſe
To gratifie my ſcornful enemies,
That laugh, as if tranſported with fo
Of paſſion, I to them had quitted all,
At random yielded up to their miſrule
And know not that I call'd and drew
My hell-hounds, to lick up the draff a
Which man's polluting ſin with taint h
On what was pure, till cram'd and gr
With ſuckt and glutted offal, at one fl
Of thy victorious arm, well pleaſing ſo
Both ſin, and death, and yawning gra
Through chaos hurl'd, obſtruct the mo
For ever, and ſeal up his ravenous jaw
Then heav'n and earth renew'd ſhall b
To ſanctitie that ſhall

New heav'n and earth ſhall to the ages riſe,
Or down from heav'n deſcend. Such was their ſong,
While the creator calling forth by name
His mightie angels gave them ſeveral charge,
As ſorted beſt with preſent things. The ſun
Had firſt his precept ſo to move, ſo ſhine,
As might affect the earth with cold and heat
Scarce tolerable, and from the north to call
Decrepit winter, from the ſouth to bring
Solſtitial ſummers heat. To the blanc moon
Her office they preſcrib'd, to th'other five
Their planetarie motions and aſpects
In Sextile, Square, and Trine, and oppoſite,
Of noxious efficacie, and when to join
In ſynod unbenigne, and taught the fixt
Their influence malignant when to ſhowre,
Which of them riſing with the ſun, or falling,
Should prove tempeſtuous: to the winds they ſet
Their corners, when with bluſter to confound
Sea, air, and ſhoar, the thunder when to rowle
With terror through the dark aereal hall.
Some ſay he bid his angels turn aſcance
The poles of earth twice ten degrees and more
From the ſun's axle; they with labour puſh'd
Oblique the centric globe: ſome ſay the ſun
Was bid turn reines from th'equinoctial rode
Like diſtant breadth to Taurus with the ſeaven
Atlantic ſiſters, and the Spartan twins
Up to the Tropic crab; thence down amain
By Leo and the Virgin and the Scales,
As deep as Capricorn, to bring in change

Had rounded ſtill th'Horiſon,
Or eaſt or weſt, which had ſor
From cold Eſtotiland, and ſout
Beneath Magellan. At that ta
The ſun, as from Thyeſtean b
His courſe intended; elſe how
Inhabited, though ſinleſs, mo
Avoided pinching cold and ſcc
Theſe changes in the heav'ns,
Like change on ſea and land,
Vapour, and miſt, and exhal
Corrupt and peſtilent: now fi
Of Norumbega, and the Sam
Burſting their brazen dungeon
And ſnow and hail and ſtormi
Boreas and Caecias and Argeſ
And Thraſcias rend the wood
With adverſe blaſt up-turns th
Notus and Afer black with th
From Serraliona; thwart of th

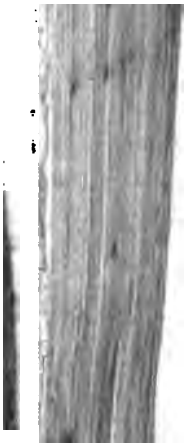
h introduc'd through fierce antipathie :
: now with beaſt gan war, and fowle with fowle,
fiſh with fiſh ; to graze the herb all leaving,
ıur'd each other ; nor ſtood much in awe
ıan, but fled him, or with count'nance grim
'd on him paſſing : theſe were from without
growing miſeries, which Adam ſaw
adie in part, though hid in gloomieſt ſhade,
orrow abandon'd, but worſe felt within,
in a troubl'd ſea of paſſion toſt,
s to disburd'n ſought with ſad complaint.
miſerable of happie ! is this the end
his new glorious world, and me ſo late
glory of that glory, who now become
urſt of bleſſed, hide me from the face
God, whom to behold was then my highth
ıappineſs : yet well, if here would end
miſerie, I deſerv'd it, and would beare
own deſervings ; but this will not ſerve ;
that I eat or drink, or ſhall beget,
ropagated curſe. O voice once heard
ghtfully, Encreaſe and multiply,
v death to hear ! for what can I encreaſe
multiplie, but curſes on my head ?
o of all ages to ſucceed, but feeling
: evil on him brought by me, will curſe
head, ill fare our anceſtor impure,
this we may thank Adam ; but his thanks
ll be the execration ; ſo beſides
ıe own that bide upon me, all from me
ll with a fierce reflux on me redound,

From darkneſs to promote me, or he
In this delicious garden? as my will
Concur'd not to my being, it were bu
And equal to reduce me to my duſt,
Deſirous to reſign, and render back
All I receav'd, unable to perform
Thy terms too hard, by which I was
The good I ſought not. To the loſs of
Sufficient penaltie, why haſt thou ad
The ſenſe of endleſs woes? inexplica
Thy juſtice ſeems; yet to ſay truth,
I thus conteſt; then ſhould have bee
Thoſe terms whatever, when they w
Thou didſt accept them; wilt thou e
Then cavil the conditions? and thou
Made thee without thy leave, what i
Prove diſobedient, and reprov'd, ret
Wherefore didſt thou beget me? I ſo
Wouldſt thou admit for his contempt
That proud excuſe? yet him not thy

dcome hour whenever! why delays
and to execute what his decree
on this day? why do I overlive,
am I mockt with death and length'nd out
eathleſs pain? how gladly would I meet
alitie my ſentence, and be earth
ſible, how glad would lay me down
i my mother's lap? there I ſhould reſt
ſleep ſecure; his dreadful voice no more
ld thunder in my ears, no fear of worſe
ne and to my ofspring would torment me
i cruel expectation. Yet one doubt
ies me ſtill, leaſt all I cannot die,
: that pure breath of life, the ſpirit of man
ch God inſpir'd, cannot together periſh
i this corporeal clod; then in the grave,
i ſome other diſmal place, who knows
I ſhall die a living death? O thought
id, if true! yet why? it was but breath
ſe that ſin'd; what dies but what had life
ſin? the body properly hath neither.
of me then ſhall die: let this appeaſe
doubt, ſince human reach no further knows.
though the lord of all be infinite,
is wrauth alſo? be it, man is not ſo,
mortal doom'd. How can he exerciſe
auth without end on man whom death muſt end?
he make deathleſs death? that were to make
nge contradiction, which to God himſelf
ioſſible is held, as argument
weakneſs, not of power. Will he draw out,

To the reception of their matter a
Not to th'extent of their own ſph
That death be not one ſtroak, as
Bereaving ſenſe, but endleſs miſeri
From this day onward, which I fe
Both in me, and without me, and
To perpetuitie; ay me, that fear
Comes thundring back with dreadf
On my defenceleſs head; both deat
Am found eternal, and incorporate
Nor I on my part ſingle, in me all
Poſteritie ſtands curſt: faire patrim
That I muſt leave ye, ſons; O wer
To waſte it all myſelf, and leave ye
So diſinherited how would ye bleſs
Me now your curſe! ah, why ſhoul
For one man's fault thus guiltleſs be
If guiltleſs? but from me what can

ll corruption, all the blame lights due;
ight the wrauth. Fond wiſh! couldſt thou ſupport
burthen heavier than the earth to bear,
all the world much heavier, though divided
that bad woman? thus what thou deſir'ſt,
what thou fear'ſt, alike deſtroys all hope
fuge, and concludes thee miſerable
nd all paſt example and future,
atan onely like both crime and doom.
nſcience, into what abyſs of fears
horrours haſt thou driv'n me: out of which
no way, from deep to deeper plung'd!
us Adam to himſelf lamented loud
ugh the ſtill night, not now, as ere man fell,
ſome and cool, and mild, but with black air
mpanied, with damps and dreadful gloom,
h to his evil conſcience repreſented
hings with double terror: on the ground
tretcht he lay, on the cold ground, and oft
'd his creation, death as oft accus'd
ardie execution, ſince denounc't
day of his offence. Why comes not death,
he, with one thrice acceptable ſtroke
nd me? ſhall truth fail to keep her word,
ce divine not haſten to be juſt?
leath comes not at call, juſtice divine
ds not her ſloweſt pace for prayers or cries.
oods, O fountains, hillocks, dales and bowers,
other echo late I taught your ſhades
nſwer, and refound far other ſong.
m thus afflicted when ſad Eve beheld.



And nateful; nothing
Like his, and colour fe
Thy inward fraud, to
Henceforth; leaft that
To helliſh falſhood, ſna
I had perfifted happie,
And wandring vanitie,
Rejected my forewarnin
Not to be truſted, longi
Though by the devil hin
To over-reach, but with
Fool'd and beguil'd, by
To truſt thee from my fi
Conſtant, mature, proof
And underſtood not all v
Rather than ſolid vertue,
Crooked by nature, bent,

ankind? this miſchief had not then befall'n,
id more that ſhall befall, innumerable
ſturbances on earth through female ſnares,
id ſtraight conjunction with this ſex: for either
: never ſhall find out fit mate, but ſuch
ſome misfortune brings him or miſtake,
whom he wiſhes moſt ſhall ſeldom gain
rough her perverſeneſs, but ſhall ſee her gain'd
a far worſe, or if ſhe love, withheld
parents, or his happieſt choice too late
all meet, alreadie linkt and wedlock-bound
a fell adverſarie, his hate or ſhame:
hich infinite calamitie ſhall cauſe
human life, and houſhold peace confound.
He added not, and from her turn'd, but Eve
ot ſo repulſt, with tears that ceas'd not flowing,
nd treſſes all diſorder'd, at his feet
ll humble, and embracing them, beſaught
is peace, and thus proceeded in her plaint.
Forſake me not thus, Adam, witneſs heav'n
hat love ſincere, and reverence in my heart
beare thee, and unweeting have offended,
nhappilie deceav'd; thy ſuppliant
beg, and claſp thy knees; bereave me not,
hereon I live, thy gentle looks, thy aid,
hy counſel in this uttermoſt diſtreſs,
y only ſtrength and ſtay: forlorn of thee,
hither ſhall I betake me, where ſubſiſt?
hile yet we live, ſcarce one ſhort hour perhaps,
etween us two let there be peace, both joyning,
s join'd in injuries, one enmitie

Againſt God only, I againſt G
And to the place of judgment
There with my cries importun
The ſentence from thy head re
On me ſole cauſe to thee of al
Me, me only juſt object of his

She ended weeping, and her
Immoveable till peace obtain'd
Acknowledg'd and deplor'd, in
Commiſeration ; ſoon his heart
Towards her, his life ſo late an
Now at his feet ſubmiſſive in d
Creature ſo fair his reconcileme
His counſel whom ſhe had diſpl
As one diſarm'd his anger all h
And thus with peaceful words

Unwarie, and too deſirous, a
So now of what thou knoweſt

To me committed, and by me expos'd,
But riſe, let us no more contend, nor blame
Each other, blam'd enough elſewhere, but ſtrive
In offices of love, how we may light'n
Each others burthen, in our ſhare of woe;
Since this day's death denounc't, if ought I ſee,
Will prove no ſudden, but a ſlow-pac't evil,
A long days dying to augment our paine,
And to our ſeed (O hapleſs Seed) deriv'd.
To whom thus Eve, recovering heart, reply'd.
Adam, by ſad experiment I know
How little weight my words with thee can find,
Found ſo erroneous, thence by juſt event
Found ſo unfortunate; nevertheleſs,
Reſtor'd by thee, vile as I am, to place
Of new acceptance, hopeful to regain
Thy love, the ſole contentment of my heart
Living or dying, from thee I will not hide
What thoughts in my unquiet breaſt are ris'n,
Tending to ſome relief of our extreams,
Or end, though ſharp and ſad, yet tolerable,
As in our evils, and of eaſier choice.
If care of our deſcent perplex us moſt,
Which muſt be born to certain woe, devour'd
By death at laſt, and miſerable it is
To be to others cauſe of miſery.
Our own begotten, and of our loins to bring
Into this curſed world a rueful race,
That after wretched life muſt be at laſt
Food for ſo foul a monſter, in thy power
It lies, yet e'er conception to prevent

From love's due rites, nuptial embr
And with desire to languish without
Before the present object languishin
With like desire, which would be m
And torment less than none of what
Then both ourselves and seed at onc
From what we fear for both, let us
Let us seek death, or he not found,
With our own hands his office on o
Why stand we longer shivering und
That shew no end but death, and h
Of many ways to die the shortest
Destruction with destruction to dest

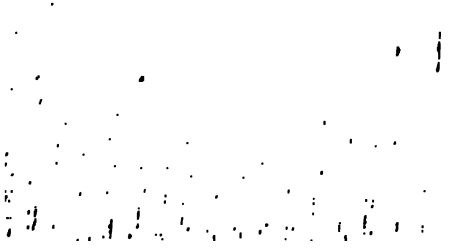
She ended here, or vehement desp
Broke off the rest; so much of dea
Had entertain'd, as di'd her cheeks
But Adam with such counsel nothin
To better hopes his more attentive

loſs of life and pleaſure overlov'd.
f thou covet death, as utmoſt end
niſerie, ſo thinking to evade
penaltie pronounc't, doubt not but God
i wiſelier arm'd his vengeful ire than ſo
e forſtall'd; much more I fear leaſt death
natcht will not exempt us from the pain
are by doom to pay; rather ſuch acts
ontumacie will provoke the Higheſt
nake death in us live: then let us ſeek
e ſafer reſolution, which methinks
ve in view, calling to mind with heed
of our ſentence, that thy ſeed ſhall bruiſe
ſerpent's head; piteous amends, unleſs
neant, whom I conjecture, our grand foe
n, who in the ſerpent hath contriv'd
inſt us this deceit: to cruſh his head
uld be revenge indeed; which will be loſt
eath brought on ourſelves, or childleſs days
lv'd, as thou propoſeſt; ſo our foe
l ſcape his puniſhment ordain'd, and we
ad ſhall double ours upon our heads.
nore be mention'd then of violence
inſt ourſelves, and wilfull barrenneſs,
t cuts us off from hope, and ſavours only
cor and pride, impatience and deſpite,
ſtance againſt God and his juſt yoke
on our necks. Remember with what mild
gracious temper he both heard and judg'd
hout wrauth or reviling; we expected
ediate diſſolution, which we thought

...ay dread; what harm? id.
My labour will ſuſtain me:
Or heat ſhould injure us, his
Hath unbeſaught provided,
Cloath'd us unworthie, pityi
How much more, if we pra
Be open, and his heart to pit
And teach us further by wha
Th'inclement ſeaſons, rain, i
Which now the ſkie with vari
To ſhew us in this mountain,
Blow moiſt and keen, ſhatteri
Of theſe fair ſpreading trees;
Some better ſhroud, ſome bett
Our limbs benumm'd, ere this
Leave cold the night, how we
Reflected, may with matter ſe
Or by collifion of two bo...

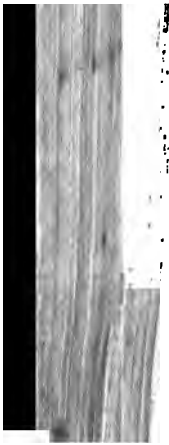
will inſtruct us praying, and of grace
eeching him, ſo as we need not fear
paſs commodiouſly this life, ſuſtain'd
him with many comfort, till we end
luſt, our final reſt and native home.
at better can we do, than to the place
airing where he judg'd us, proſtrate fall
ore him reverent, and there confeſs
mbly our faults, and pardon beg, with tears
tering the ground, and with our ſighs the air
quenting, ſent from hearts contrite, in ſign
ſorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.
loubtedly he will relent and turn
m his diſpleaſure; in whoſe look ſerene,
en angry moſt he ſeem'd and moſt ſevere,
at elſe but favour, grace, and mercie ſhon?
ō ſpake our father penitent, nor Eve
: leſs remorſe: they forthwith to the place
airing where he judg'd them proſtrate fell
ore him reverent, and both confeſs'd
mbly their faults, and pardon beg'd, with tears
tering the ground, and with their ſighs the air
quenting, ſent from hearts contrite, in ſign
ſorrow unfeign'd, and humiliation meek.

The End of the Tenth Book.



Fruits of more pleasing savour from thy seed
Sown with contrition in his heart, than those
Which his own hand manuring all the trees
Of Paradise could have produc't, ere fall'n
From innocence. Now therefore bend thine ear
To supplication, hear his sighs though mute;
Unskilful with what words to pray, let me
Interpret for him, me his advocate
And propitiation, all his works on me
Good or not good ingraft, my merit those
Shall perfect, and for these my death shall pay.
Accept me, and in me from these receave
The smell of peace toward mankind, let him live
Before thee reconcil'd, at least his days
Number'd, though sad, till death, his doom (which I
To mitigate thus plead, not to reverse)
To better life shall yield him, where with me
All my redeem'd may dwell in joy and bliss,
Made one with me as I with thee am one.

To whom the Father, without cloud, serene.
All thy request for man, accepted Son,
Obtain, all thy request was my decree:
But longer in that Paradise to dwell,
The law I gave to nature him forbids:
Those pure immortal elements that know
No gross, no unharmonious mixture foule,
Eject him, tainted now, and purge him off
As a distemper, gross to air as gross,
And mortal food, as may dispose him best
For dissolution wrought by sin, that first
Distemper'd all things, and of incorrupt



...p tribulation,
By faith and faithful work
Wakt in the renovation of
Refigns him up with heav'
But let us call to ſynod all
Through heav'n's wide boun
My judgments, how with
As how with peccant angel
And in their ſtate, though
He ended, and the Son g
To the bright miniſter that
His trumpet, heard in Oreb
When God deſcended, and
To ſound at general doom.
Fill'd all the regions: from
Of Amarantin ſhade, founta
By the waters of life, where
In fellowſhips of

appier, had it ſuffic'd him to have known
ood by itſelf, and evil not at all.
e ſorrows now, repents, and prays contrite,
y motions in him, longer than they move,
s heart I know, how variable and vain
lf-left. Leaſt therefore his new bolder hand
each alſo of the tree of life, and eat,
nd live for ever, dream at leaſt to live
or ever, to remove him I decree,
nd ſend him from the garden forth to till
he ground whence he was taken, fitter ſoil.
Michael, this my behеſt have thou in charge,
ake to thee from among the cherubim
hy choice of flaming warriours, leaſt the fiend
r in behalf of man, or to invade
acant poſſeſſion ſome new trouble raiſe:
aſte thee, and from the Paradiſe of God
'ithout remorſe drive out the ſinful pair,
om hallow'd ground th'unholie, and denounce
o them and to their progenie from thence
erpetual banishment. Yet leaſt they faint
t the ſad ſentence rigorouſly urg'd,
or I behold them ſoft'ned and with tears
ewailing their exceſs, all terror hide.
patiently thy bidding they obey,
iſmiſs them not diſconſolate; reveal
o Adam what ſhall come in future days,
s I ſhall thee enlighten, intermix
ly cov'nant in the woman's ſeed renew'd;
o ſend them forth, though ſorrowing, yet in peace:
nd on the eaſt ſide of the garden place,

With whoſe ſtol'n fruit ma
He ceas'd; and th'archang
For ſwift deſcent, with hi
Of watchful cherubim; f
Had, like a double Janus,
Spangl'd with eyes more nu
Of Argus, and more wak
Charm'd with Arcadian pip
Of Hermes, or his opiate
To reſalute the world with
Leucothea wak'd, and wit
The earth, when Adam an
Had ended now their oriſon
Strength added from above,
Out of deſpaire, joy, but w
Which thus to Eve his welc

Eve, eaſily may faith adm

Kneel'd and before him humbl'd all my heart,
Methought I saw him placable and mild,
Bending his ear; persuasion in me grew
That I was heard with favour; peace return'd
Home to my breast, and to my memorie
His promise, that thy seed shall bruise our foe;
Which then not minded in dismay, yet now
Assures me that the bitterness of death
Is past, and we shall live. Whence hast to thee,
Eve rightly call'd, mother of all mankind,
Mother of all things living, since by thee
Man is to live, and all things live for man.

To whom thus Eve with sad demeanour meek.
Ill worthie I such title should belong
To me transgressour, who for thee ordain'd
A help, became thy snare; to me reproach
Rather belongs, distrust and all disgrace:
But infinite in pardon was my judge.
That I who first brought death on all, am grac't
The source of life; next favourable thou,
Who highly thus to entitle me voutsaf't,
Far other name deserving. But the field
To labour calls us now with sweat impos'd,
Though after sleepless night; for see the morn,
All unconcern'd with our unrest, begins
Her rosie progress smiling; let us forth,
I never from thy side henceforth to stray,
Where'er our day's work lies, though now enjoin'd
Laborious, till day droop; while here we dwell,
What can be toilsome in these pleasant walkes?
Here let us live, though in fall'n state, content.

Down from a hill the b
Firſt hunter then, purſ
Goodlieſt of all the forr
Direct to th'eaſtern gat
Adam obſerv'd, and wi
Purſuing, not unmov'd

O Eve, ſome further
Which heav'n, by theſe
Forerunners of his purp
Us haply too ſecure of
From penaltie, becauſe f
Some days; how long,
Who knows, or more tha
And thither muſt return.
Why elſe this double obje
Of flight purſu'd in th'air,
One way the ſelf ſame hou

And carnal fear that day dimm'd Adam's eye.
Nor that more glorious, when the angels met
Jacob in Mahanaim, where he ſaw
The field pavillion'd with his guardians bright;
Nor that which on the flaming mount appear'd
In Dothan, cover'd with a camp of fire,
Againſt the Syrian king, who to ſurprize
One man, aſſaſſin-like had levied war,
War unproclaim'd. The princely hierarch
In their bright ſtand, there left his powers to ſeiſe
Poſſeſſion of the garden; he alone,
To find where Adam ſhelter'd, took his way,
Not unperceiv'd of Adam, who to Eve,
While the great viſitant approach'd, thus ſpake.
Eve, now expect great tidings, which perhaps
Of us will ſoon determine, or impoſe
New laws to be obſerv'd; for I deſcrie
From yonder blazing cloud that veils the hill
One of the heav'nly hoſt, and by his gate
None of the meaneſt, ſome great potentate
Or of the thrones above, ſuch majeſtie
Inveſts him coming; yet not terrible,
That I ſhould fear, nor ſociably mild,
As Raphael, that I ſhould much confide,
But ſolemn and ſublime, whom not to offend,
With reverence I muſt meet, and thou retire.
He ended; and th'archangel ſoon drew nigh,
Not in his ſhape celeſtial, but as man
Clad to meet man; over his lucid arms
A militarie veſt of purple flow'd
Livelier than Meliboean, or the grain

Satan's dire dream, and in his rising sees
Adam bow'd low, he kingly from his side
Inclin'd not, but his coming thus declar'd

Adam, heav'n's high behest no preface
Sufficient that thy prayers are heard, and
Then due by sentence when thou didst
Defeated of his seisure many days
Giv'n thee of grace, wherein thou may'st
And one bad act with many deeds well d
May'st cover: well may then thy Lord
Redeem thee quite from death's rapacious
But longer in this Paradise to dwell
Permits not; to remove thee I am come
And send thee from the garden forth to
The ground whence thou wast taken, fi

He added not, for Adam at the new
Heart-struck with chilling gripe of sorr
That all his senses bound; Eve who u

t never will in other climate grow,
early viſitation, and my laſt
ev'n, which I bred up with tender hand
n the firſt op'ning bud, and gave ye names,
o now ſhall rear ye to the ſun, or ranke
r tribes, and water from th'ambroſial fount?
e laſtly nuptial bowre, by me adorn'd
h what to ſight or ſmell was ſweet; from thee
ſhall I part, and whether wander down
a lower world, to this obſcure
l wild, how ſhall we breath in other air
pure, accuſtom'd to immortal freits?
Whom thus the angel interrupted mild.
ient not Eve, but patiently reſign
at juſtly thou haſt loſt; nor ſet thy heart,
s over-fond, on that which is not thine;
going is not lonely, with thee goes
huſband, him to follow thou art bound;
ere he abides, think there thy native ſoil.
dam by this from the cold ſudden damp
overing, and his ſcatter'd ſpirits return'd,
Michael thus his humble words addreſs'd.
eſtial, whether among the thrones, or nam'd
them the higheſt, for ſuch of ſhape may ſeem
ce above princes, gently haſt thou told
meſſage, which might elſe in telling wound,
l in performing end us; what beſides
ſorrow and dejection and deſpair
frailtie can ſuſtain, thy tidings bring,
arture from this happie place, our ſweet
eſs, and only conſolation left

'amiliar to our eyes, all places elſe
nhoſpitable appeer and deſolate.
Vor knowing us nor known: and if by prayer
nceſſant I could hope to change the will
)f him who all things can, I would not ceaſe
'o wearie him with my aſſiduous cries:
3ut prayer againſt his abſolute decree
No more avails than breath againſt the wind,
Blown ſtifling back on him that breaths it forth:
Therefore to his great bidding I ſubmit.
This moſt afflicts me, that departing hence,
As from his face I ſhall be hid, depriv'd
His bleſſed count'nance; here I could frequent,
With worſhip, place by place where he vouſaf'd
Preſence divine, and to my ſons relate;
On this mount he appeer'd, under this tree
Stood viſible, among theſe pines his voice

only; his omnipreſence fills
id air, and every kind that lives,
his virtual power and warm'd:
e gave thee to poſſeſs and rule,
gift; ſurmiſe not then
to theſe narrow bounds confin'd
r Eden: this had been
apital ſeat, from whence had ſpred
ns, and had hither come
ends of the earth, to celebrate
e thee their great progenitor.
eminence thou haſt loſt, brought dov
even ground now with thy ſons:
t but in vallie and in plain
e, and will be found alike
of his preſence many a ſign
g thee, ſtill compaſſing thee round
ſe and paternal love, his face
of his ſteps the track divine.
hou mayſt believe, and be confirm'd
n hence depart, know I am ſent
: what ſhall come in future days
to thy offspring; good with bad
ar, ſupernal grace contending.
ieſs of men; thereby to learn
e, and to temper joy with fear
rrow, equally enur'd
on either ſtate to bear,
r adverſe: ſo ſhalt thou lead
e, and beſt prepar'd endure
paſſage when it comes. Aſcend

However chaſtning, to the evil turn
My obvious breaſt, arming to overc
By ſuffering, and earn reſt from la
If ſo I may attain. So both aſcen
In the viſions of God: it was a hi
Of Paradiſe the higheſt, from whoſ
The hemiſphere of earth in cleereſ
Strecht out to the ampleſt reach of
Not higher that hill nor wider look
Whereon for different cauſe the ten
Our ſecond Adam in the wilderneſs
To ſhew him all earth's kingdoms
His eye might there command whe
City of old or modern fame, the ſe
Of mightieſt empire, from the deſt
Of Cambalu, ſeat of Cathaian Can
And Samarchand by Oxus, Temir

Ercoco and the leſs Maritime kings
Mombaza, and Quiloa, and Melind,
And Sofala thought Ophir, to the realm
Of Congo, and Angola fardeſt ſouth;
Or thence from Niger flood to Atlas mount
The kingdoms of Almanzor, Fez and Sus,
Morocco and Algiers, and Tremiſen;
On Europe thence, and where Rome was to ſway
The world: in ſpirit perhaps he alſo ſaw
Rich Mexico the ſeat of Montezume,
And Cuſco in Peru, the richer ſeat
Of Atabalipa, and yet unſpoil'd
Guiana whoſe great city Geryon's ſons
Call El Dorado: but to nobler ſights
Michael from Adam's eyes the filme remov'd
Which that falſe fruit that promis'd clearer ſight
Had bred; then purged with euphraſie and rue
The viſual nerve, for he had much to ſee;
And from the well of life three drops inſtill'd.
So deep the power of theſe ingredients pierc'd,
Ev'n to the inmoſt ſeat of mental ſight,
That Adam now enforc't to cloſe his eyes,
Sunk down and all his ſpirits became intranc't:
But him the gentle angel by the hand
Soon rais'd, and his attention thus recall'd.

Adam, now ope thine eyes, and firſt behold
Th'effects which thy original crime hath wrought
In ſome to ſpring from thee, who never touch'd
Th'excepted tree, nor with the ſnake conſpir'd,
Nor finn'd thy ſin, yet from that derive
Corruption to bring forth more violent deeds.

A sweatie reaper from his tillage -
Firſt fruits, the green eare, and tl
Uncull'd, as came to hand; a ſhe
More meek came with the firſtlin
Choiceſt and beſt; then ſacrificing
The inwards and their fat, with i
On the cleft wood, and all due rit
His offering ſoon propitious fire f
Conſum'd with nimble glance, an
The others not, for his was not fin
Whereat he inlie rag'd, and as th
Smote him into the midriff with a
That beat out life; he fell, and c
Groan'd out his ſoul with guſhing
Much at that ſight was Adam in
Diſmai'd, and thus in haſte to th'

O Teacher, ſome great miſchie
To that meek man, who well h

Rowling in duſt and gore. To which our ſire.
Alas, both for the deed and for the cauſe!
But have I now ſeen death? is this the way
I muſt return to native duſt? O ſight
Of terrour, foul and ugly to behold,
Horrid to think, how horrible to feel!
To whom thus Michael. Death thou haſt ſeen
In his firſt ſhape on man; but many ſhapes
Of death, and many are the wayes that lead
To his grim cave, all diſmal; yet to ſenſe
More terrible at th'entrance than within.
Some, as thou ſaw'ſt, by violent ſtroke ſhall die,
By fire, flood, famine, by intemperance more
In meats and drinks, which on the earth ſhall bring
Diſeaſes dire, of which a monſtrous crew
Before thee ſhall appear; that thou mayſt know
What miſerie th'inabſtinence of Eve
Shall bring on men. Immediately a place
Before his eyes appear'd, ſad, noyſome, dark,
A lazar-houſe it ſeem'd, wherein were laid
Numbers of all diſeas'd, all maladies
Of ghaſtly ſpaſm, or racking torture, qualmes
Of heart-ſick agonie, all feverous kinds,
Convulſions, epilepſies, fierce catarrhs,
Inteſtine ſtone and ulcer; colic pangs,
Dæmoniac phrenzie, moaping melancholie
And moon-ſtruck madneſs, pining atrophie,
Maraſmus, and wide-waſting peſtilence,
Dropſies, and aſthma's, and joint-racking rheums.
Dire was the toſſing, deep the groans, deſpair
Tended the ſick buſieſt from couch to couch;

His beſt of man, and gave him up
A ſpace, till firmer thoughts reſtrai
And ſcarce recovering words his
O miſerable mankind, to what f
Degraded, to what wretched ſtate
Better end here unborn. Why is l
To be thus wreſted from us? rath
Obtruded on us thus? who if we
What we receive, would either not
Life offer'd, or ſoon beg to lay it
Glad to be ſo diſmiſt in peace. Ca
Th'image of God in man created o
So goodly and erect, though faulti
To ſuch unfightly ſufferings be deb
Under inhuman pains? why ſhoul
Retaining ſtill divine ſimilitude
In part, from ſuch deformities be
And for his maker's image ſake ex

Or if his likeneſs, by themſelves defac't
While they pervert pure nature's healthful rules
To lothſome ſickneſs, worthily, ſince they
God's image did not reverence in themſelves.
I yield it juſt, ſaid Adam, and ſubmit.
But is there yet no other way, beſides
Theſe painful paſſages, how we may come
To death, and mix with our connatural duſt?
There is, ſaid Michael, if thou well obſerve
The rule of not too much, by temperance taught
In what thou eatſt and drinkſt, ſeeking from thence
Due nouriſhment, not glutonous delight,
Till many years over thy head return:
So maiſt thou live, till like ripe fruit thou drop
Into thy mother's lap, or be with eaſe
Gather'd, not harſhly pluckt, for death mature:
This is old age; but then thou muſt outlive
Thy youth, thy ſtrength, thy beauty, which will change
To wither'd weak and gray; thy ſenſes then
Obtuſe, all taſte of pleaſure muſt forgoe,
To what thou haſt, and for the air of youth
Hopeful and cheerful, in thy blood will reign
A melancholy damp of cold and dry
To weigh thy ſpirits down, and laſt conſume
The balm of life. To whom our anceſtor.
Henceforth I flie not death, nor would prolong
Life much, bent rather how I may be quit
Faireſt and eaſieſt of this cumbrous charge,
Which I muſt keep till my appointed day
Of rendring up, and patiently attend
My *diſſolution*. Michael repli'd,

Was heard, of harp and organ; and
Their ſtops and chords was ſeen: hi
Inſtinct through all proportions low a
Fled and purſu'd tranſverſe the reſona
In other part ſtood one who at the fo
Labouring, two maſſie clods of iron
Had melted (whether found where c
Haſt wafted woods on mountain or
Down to the veins of earth, thence
To ſome cave's mouth, or whether
From underground) the liquid ore h
Into fit moulds prepar'd; from whi
Firſt his own tools; then what migh
Fuſil or grav'n in mettle. After t
But on the lither ſide a different ſor
From the high neighbouring hills, w
Down to the plain deſcended: by t
Juſt men they ſeem'd, and all their
To worſhip God aright, and know
Not bid, nor thoſe things laſt whic

Soft amorous ditties, and in dance came on :
The men though grave, eye'd them, and let their eyes
Rove without rein, till in the amorous net
Faſt caught, they lik'd, and each his liking choſe ;
And now of love they treat till th'evening ſtar
Love's harbinger appear'd ; then all in heat
They light the nuptial torch, and bid invoke
Hymen, then firſt to marriage rites invok't ;
With feaſt and muſic all the tents reſound.
Such happie interview and fair event
Of love and youth not loſt, ſongs, garlands, flours
And charming ſymphonies attach'd the heart
Of Adam, ſoon inclin'd to admit delight,
The bent of nature ; which he thus expreſs'd.

True opener of mine eyes, prime angel bleſt,
Much better ſeems this viſion, and more hope
Of peaceful dayes portends, than thoſe two paſt ;
Thoſe were of hate and death, or pain much worſe
Here nature ſeems fulfill'd in all her ends.

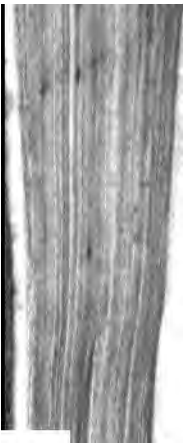
To whom thus Michael. Judge not what is beſt
By pleaſure, though to nature ſeeming meet,
Created, as thou art, to nobler end
Holie and pure, conformitie divine.
Thoſe tents thou ſawſt ſo pleaſant, were the tents
Of wickedneſs, wherein ſhall dwell his race
Who ſlew his brother ; ſtudious they appear
Of arts that poliſh life, inventers rare,
Unmindful of their Maker, though his ſpirit
Taught them, but they his gifts acknowledg'd non
Yet they a beauteous offſping ſhall beget ;
For that fair female troop thou ſawſt, that ſeem'

Religious titled them ...
Shall yield up all their virtue, all their
Ignobly, to the traines and to the ſmil
Of theſe fair atheiſts, and now ſwim i
(Ere long to ſwim at large) and laug
The world ere long a world of tears.
To whom thus Adam of ſhort jo
O pitie and ſhame, that they who t
Enter'd ſo faire, ſhould turn aſide t
Paths indirect, or in the midway f
But ſtill I ſee the tenor of man's
Holds on the ſame, from woman
From man's effeminate ſlackne
Said th'angel, who ſhould better
By wiſdom, and ſuperior gifts re
But now prepare thee for anoth
He look'd and ſaw wide territ
Before him, towns, and rural
Cities of men with lofty gates
Concourſe in arms, fierce face
... bons, and

e way a band ſelect from forage drives
ierd of beeves, fair oxen and fair kine
m a fat meddow ground; or fleecy flock,
es and their bleating lambs over the plain,
eir bootie; ſcarce with life the ſhepherds flye,
: call in aid, which makes a bloody fray;
th cruel tournament the ſquadrons join;
iere cattel paſtur'd late, now ſcatter'd lies
th carcaſſes and arms th'emſanguin'd field
erted: others to a city ſtrong
r ſiege, encampt; by batterie, ſcale, and mine,
aulting; others from the wall defend
th dart and jav'lin, ſtones and ſulfurous fire;
each hand ſlaughter and gigantic deeds.
other parts the ſcepter'd heralds call
council in the citie gates: anon
ey-headed men and grave, with warriours mixt,
emble, and harangues are heard, but ſoon
factious oppoſition, till at laſt
middle age one riſing, eminent
wiſe deport, ſpake much of right and wrong,
juſtice, of religion, truth and peace,
d judgment from above: him old and young
oloded, and had ſeiz'd with violent hands,
d not a cloud deſcending ſnatch'd him thence
ſeen amid the throng: ſo violence
ceeded, and oppreſſion, and ſword-law
rough all the plain, and refuge none was found.
am was all in tears, and to his guide
nenting turn'd full ſad; O what are theſe,
ith's miniſters, not men, who thus deal death

Where good with bad were
Abhor to join; and by imp
Produce prodigious births o
Such were these giants, me
For in those days might only
And valour and heroic vertu
To overcome in battle, and
Nations, and bring home sp
Man-slaughter, shall be held
Of human glorie, and for g
Of triumph, to be styl'd gre
Patrons of mankind, gods,
Destroyers rightlier call'd ar
Thus fame shall be atchiev'd
And what most merits fame
But he the seventh from thee,
The only righteous in a wor
And therefore hated, there

m and the climes of bliſs,
death; to ſhew thee what reward
d, the reſt what punishment;
reſt thine eyes and ſoon behold.
nd ſaw the face of things quite chang'd,
roat of war had ceas'd to roar,
rm'd to jolliſie and game,
riot, feaſt and dance,
roſtituting as befell,
ie, where paſſing faire
thence from cups to civil broiles.
verend fire among them came,
loings great diſlike declar'd,
gainſt their wayes; he oft
ir aſſemblies, whereſo met,
eſtivals, and to them preach'd
d repentance, as to ſouls
judgments imminent:
which when he ſaw he ceas'd
nd remov'd his tents far off;
mountain hewing timber tall,
a veſſel of huge bulk,
ibit, length, and breadth, and highth,
with pitch, and in the ſide a dore
of proviſions laid in large
eaſt: when lo a wonder ſtrange!
, and bird, and inſect ſmall
and pairs, and enter'd in as taught
laſt the fire, and his three ſons
ir wives; and God made faſt the dore.
e ſouth wind roſe, and with black wings



And more was ſeen ; the
Uplifted ; and ſecure wi
Rode tilting o're the wa
Flood overwhelm'd, and
Deep under water roul'd
Sea without ſhoar ; and i
Where luxurie late reign'
And ſtabl'd ; of mankinc
All left, in one ſmall bot
How didſt thou grieve th
The end of all thy offſpri
Depopulation ; thee anoth
Of tears and ſorrow a flou
And ſunk thee as thy ſons
By th'angel, on thy feet th
Though comfortleſs, as wh
His children, all in view de

With thought that they muſt be. Let no man ſeek
Henceforth to be foretold what ſhall befall
Him or his children, evil he may be ſure,
Which neither his foreknowing can prevent,
And he the future evil ſhall no leſs
In apprehenſion than in ſubſtance feel
Grievous to bear: but that care now is paſt,
Man is not whom to warn: thoſe few eſcap't
Famine and anguiſh will at laſt conſume
Wandring that watrie deſert: I had hope
When violence was ceas't, and war on earth,
All would have then gone well, peace would have crown'd
With length of happy days the race of man;
But I was far deceav'd; for now I ſee
Peace to corrupt no leſs than war to waſte.
How comes it thus? unfould, celeſtial guide,
And whether here the race of man will end.
To whom thus Michael. Thoſe whom laſt thou ſaw'ſt
In triumph and luxurious wealth, are they
Firſt ſeen in acts of proweſs eminent
And great exploits, but of true vertue void;
Who having ſpilt much blood, and done much waſte
Subduing nations, and atchiev'd thereby
Fame in the world, high titles, and rich prey,
Shall change their courſe to pleaſure, eaſe, and ſloth,
Surfeit, and luſt, till wantonneſs and pride
Raiſe out of friendſhip hoſtile deeds in peace.
The conquer'd alſo, and enſlav'd by war
Shall with their freedom loſt all vertue loſe
And fear of God, from whom their pietie feign'd
In ſharp conteſt of battel found no aid

Againſt invaders; therefore cool'd in zeal
Thenceforth ſhall practiſe how to live ſecure,
Worldlie or diſſolute, on what their lords
Shall leave them to enjoy; for th'earth ſhall bear
More then anough, that temperance may be try'd:
So all ſhall turn degenerate, all deprav'd,
Juſtice and temperance, truth and faith forgot;
One man except, the only ſon of light
In a dark age, againſt example good,
Againſt allurement, cuſtom, and a world
Offended; fearleſs of reproach and ſcorn,
Or violence, he of their wicked wayes
Shall them admoniſh, and before them ſet
The paths of righteouſneſs, how much more ſafe,
And full of peace, denouncing wrauth to come
On their impenitence; and ſhall return
Of them derided, but of God obſerv'd
The one juſt man alive; by his command

With all his verdure ſpoil'd, and trees adrift
Down the great river to the op'ning gulph,
And there take root an iſland ſalt and bare,
The haunt of ſeales and orcs, and ſea-mews clang.
To teach thee that God attributes to place
No ſanctitie, if none be thither brought
By men who there frequent, or therein dwell.
And now what further ſhall enſue, behold.
He look'd, and ſaw the ark hull on the floud,
Which now abated, for the clouds were fled,
Driv'n by a keen north-wind, that blowing drie
Wrinkl'd the face of deluge, as decai'd;
And the cleer ſun on his wide watrie glaſs
Gaz'd hot, and of the freſh wave largely drew,
As after thirſt, which made their flowing ſhrink
From ſtanding lake to tripping ebb, that ſtole
With ſoft foot towards the deep, who now had ſtopt
His ſluces, as the heav'n his windows ſhut.
The ark no more now flotes, but ſeems on ground
Faſt on the top of ſome high mountain fixt.
And now the tops of hills as rocks appeer;
With clamour thence the rapid currents drive
Towards the retreating ſea their furious tide.
Forthwith from out the ark a raven flies,
And after him, the ſurer meſſenger,
A dove ſent forth once and again to ſpie
Green tree or ground whereon his foot may light;
The ſecond time returning, in his bill
An olive leaf he brings, pacific ſign:
Anon drie ground appeers, and from his ark
The ancient ſire deſcends with all his train;

O thou who future things canſt rep
As preſent, heav'nly inſtructor, I rev
At this laſt ſight, aſſur'd that man ſh
With all the creatures, and their ſeed
Far leſs I now lament for one whole
Of wicked ſons deſtroy'd, than I rejo
For one man found ſo perfet and ſo j
That God voutſafes to raiſe another w
From him, and all his anger to forget.
But ſay, what mean thoſe colour'd ſtre
Diſtended as the brow of God appeas'
Or ſerve they as a flourie verge to bind
The fluid ſkirts of that ſame watrie cl
Leaſt it again diſſolve and ſhowr the e

To whom th'archangel. Dextrouſl
So willingly doth God remit his ire,
Though late repenting him of man dep
Griev'd at his heart, when looking do
The whole earth fill'd with violence,
Corrupting each thing

Surpaſs his bounds, nor rain to drown the world
With man therein or beaſt; but when he brings
Over the earth a cloud, will therein ſet
His triple-colour'd bow, whereon to look
And call to mind his cov'nant: day and night,
Seed time and harveſt, heat and hoary froſt
Shall hold their courſe, till fire purge all things ne
Both heav'n and earth, wherein the juſt ſhall dwel

The End of the Eleventh Book.

Betwixt the world deſtroy'd and wor
If Adam aught perhaps might interp
Then with tranſition ſweet new ſpeec

Thus thou haſt ſeen one world beg
And man as from a ſecond ſtock pro
Much thou haſt yet to ſee, but I per
Thy mortal ſight to fail; objects divi
Muſt needs impaire and wearie huma
Henceforth what is to come I will re
Thou therefore give due audience, ar
This ſecond ſource of men, while y
And while the dread of judgment pa
Freſh in their minds, fearing the deit
With ſome regard to what is juſt and
Shall lead their lives, and multiplie a
Labouring the ſoil, and reaping plen
Corn, wine and oyle; and from the
Oft ſacrificing bullock, lamb, or kid
With large wine-off'rings pour'd, ar
Shall ſpend their dayes in joy unblam
Long time in peace by families and t

Will arrogate dominion u
Over his brethren, and qu
Concord and law of natur
Hunting (and men, not be
With war and hostile snare
Subjection to his empire tyr
A mighty hunter thence he
Before the Lord, as in defpig
Or from heav'n claiming feco
And from rebellion shall deri
Though of rebellion others he
He with a crew, whom like a
With him or under him to tyra
Marching from Eden towards t
The plain, wherein a black bitu
Boiles out from under ground, t
Of brick, and of that stuff they
A citie and towre, whose top ma
And get themselves a name, leaft
In foreign lands their memorie be
Regardless whether good or evil fa
But God who oft descends to visit
Unseen, and through their habitatio
To mark their doings, them behold
Comes down to see their city, ere th
Obstruct heav'n towers, and in deri
Upon their tongues a various spirit to
Quite out their native language, and i
To sow a jangling noise of words unk
Forthwith a hidious gabble rises loud
Among the builders; each to other call

O execrable ſon ſo to aſ
Above his brethren, to h
Authoritie uſurpt, from
He gave us only over bea
Dominion abſolute; that
By his donation; but ma
He made not lord; ſuch
Reſerving, human left fro
But this uſurper his encro
Stayes not on man; to G
Siege and defiance: wretc
Will he convey up thither
Himſelf and his raſh armie,
Above the clouds will pine
And famiſh him of breath,

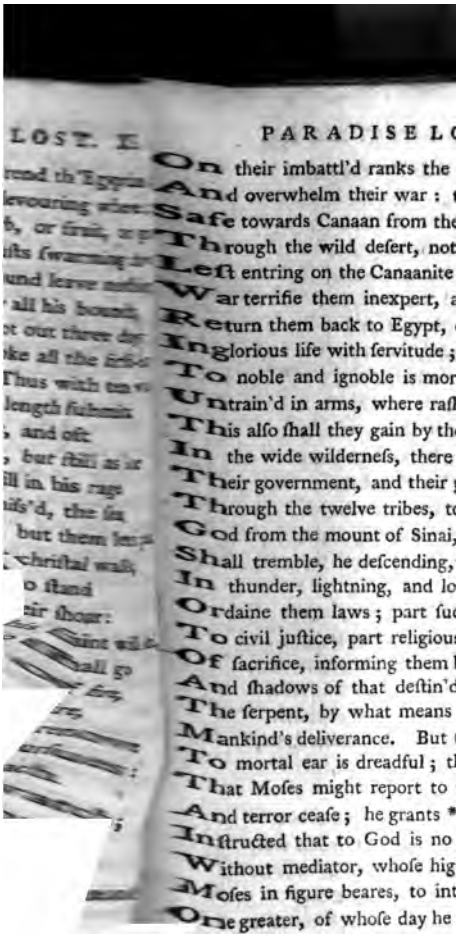
To whom thus Michael.
That ſon, who on the quiet
Such trouble brought, affect
Rational libertie; yet know
Since thy original lapſe

reaſon, and to ſervitude reduce
till then free. Therefore ſince he permits
in himſelf unworthie powers to reign
free reaſon, God in judgment juſt
ſts him from without to violent lords;
oft as undeſervedly enthrall
utward freedom: tyrannie muſt be,
igh to the tyrant thereby no excuſe.
ometimes nations will decline ſo low
virtue, which is reaſon, that no wrong,
uſtice, and ſome fatal curſe annext
ve them of their outward libertie,
inward loſt: witneſs th'irreverent ſon
im who built the arc, who for the ſhame
to his father, heard this heavy curſe,
nt of ſervants, on his vitious race.
will this latter, as the former world,
tend from bad to worſe, till God at laſt
ied with their iniquities, withdraw
reſence from among them, and avert
oly eyes; reſolving from thenceforth
ave them to their own polluted wayes:
one peculiar nation to ſelect
all the reſt, of whom to be invok'd,
tion from one faithful man to ſpring:
on this ſide Euphrates yet reſiding,
up in idol-worſhip; O that men
ſt thou believe?) ſhould be ſo ſtupid grown,
e yet the patriarch liv'd, who ſcap'd the flood,
forſake the living God, and fall
orſhip their own work in wood and ſtone

...ection to, that
All nations ſhall be ble
Not knowing to what lar
I ſee him, but thou can
He leaves his gods, his
Ur of Chaldea, paſſing
To Haran, after him a c
Of herds and flocks, anc
Not wandring poor, but
With God, who call'd hi
Canaan he now attains,
Pitcht about Sechem, anc
Of Moreh; there by pro
Gift to his progenie of a
From Hamath northward
(Things by their names I c
From Hermon eaſt to the
Mount Hermon, yonder
In proſpect, as I point the
Mount Carmel; here the c
Jordan, true limit eaſtwar

veal'd. This patriarch bleſt,
raham due time ſhall call,
on a grand-child leaves,
n wiſdom, and renown;
ith twelve ſons increaſt, departs
land hereafter call'd
the river Nile;
, diſgorging at ſeaven mouths
journ in that land
by a younger ſon
a ſon whoſe worthy deeds
e ſecond in that realm
he dies, and leaves his race
tion, and now grown
uent king, who ſeeks
growth, as inmate gueſts
whence of gueſts he makes them ſlaves
kills their infant males:
ren (thoſe two brethren call
ſent from God to claim
nthralment, they return
oil back to their promis'd land.
is tyrant, who denies
od, or meſſage to regard,
by ſigns and judgements dire;
the rivers muſt be turn'd,
ies muſt all his palace fill
uſion, and fill all the land;
f rot and murrain die,
ies muſt all his fleſh imboſs,
e; thunder mixt with hail,

Laſt with one midnight ſtroke all tl
Of Egypt muſt lie dead. Thus wi
The river-dragon tam'd at length f
To let his ſojourners depart, and o
Humbles his ſtubborn heart, but fl
More hard'nd after thaw, till in hi
Purſuing whom he late diſmiſs'd, t
Swallows him with his hoſt, but t
As on drie land between two chriſ
Aw'd by the rod of Moſes ſo to ſta
Divided, till his reſcu'd gain their f
Such wondrous power God to his
Though preſent in his angel, who
Before them in a cloud, and pillar
By day a cloud, by night a pillar o
To guide them in their journey, a
Behind them, while th'obdurate kin
All night he will purſue, but his ap
Darkneſs defends between till morr
Then through the fiery pillar and

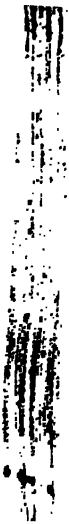

LOST. E
PARADISE L
On their imbattl'd ranks the
And overwhelm their war :
Safe towards Canaan from the
Through the wild defert, not
Left entring on the Canaanite
War terrifie them inexpert,
Return them back to Egypt,
Inglorious life with fervitude ;
To noble and ignoble is mor
Untrain'd in arms, where raf
This alfo fhall they gain by th
In the wide wilderneſs, there
Their government, and their
Through the twelve tribes, t
God from the mount of Sinai,
Shall tremble, he defcending,
In thunder, lightning, and lo
Ordaine them laws ; part fuc
To civil juſtice, part religiou
Of ſacrifice, informing them
And ſhadows of that deſtin'd
The ſerpent, by what means
Mankind's deliverance. But
To mortal ear is dreadful ; t
That Moſes might report to
And terror ceaſe ; he grants *
Inſtructed that to God is no
Without mediator, whoſe hig
Moſes in figure beares, to int
One greater, of whoſe day he

* *2d. Ed. 1ſt.* them thei

By his preſcript a ſanctuarie is fram
Of cedar, overlaid with gold, ther
An ark, and in the ark his teſtimo
The records of his cov'nant, over
A mercie-ſeat of gold betweene the
Of two bright cherubim, before hi
Seaven lamps as in a Zodiac repref
The heav'nly fires; over the tent
Shall reſt by day, a fierie gleame b
Save when they journie, and at ler
Conducted by his angel to the land
Promiſed to Abraham and his ſeed
Were long to tell, how many battl
How many kings deſtroy'd, and ki
Or how the ſun ſhall in mid heave
A day entire, and night's due cour
Man's voice commanding, ſun in C
And thou moon in the vale of Aia
Till Iſrael overcome; ſo call the tl
From Abraham, ſon of Iſaac, and

ſine eyes true op'ning, and my heart much eas'd,
:rewhile perplext with thoughts what would become
)f me and all mankind; but now I ſee
lis day, in whom all nations ſhall be bleſt,
avour unmerited by me, who ſought
orbidd'n knowledge by forbidd'n means.
'his yet I apprehend not, why to thoſe
ımong whom God will deign to dwell on earth
o many and ſo various laws are given;
o many laws argue ſo many ſins
ımong them; how can God with ſuch reſide?

To whom thus Michael. Doubt not but that ſin
Vill reign among them, as of thee begot;
ınd therefore was law giv'n them to evince
'heir natural pravitie by ſtirring up
in againſt law to fight; that when they ſee
aw can diſcover ſin, but not remove,
ave by thoſe ſhadowie expiations weak,
'he blood of bulls and goats, they may conclude
ome blood more precious muſt be paid for man,
uſt for unjuſt, that in ſuch righteouſneſs
'o them by faith imputed, they may find
uſtification towards God, and peace
)f conſcience, which the law by ceremonies
'annot appeaſe, nor man the moral part
'erform and not performing cannot live.
o law appears imperfect, and but giv'n
Vith purpoſe to reſign them in full time
Jp to a better cov'nant, diſciplin'd
'rom ſhadowie types to truth, from fleſh to ſpirit,
'rom impoſition of ſtrict laws, to free



His name and once [illegible],
The adverſarie ſerpent, and bring back
Through the world's wilderneſs long wander'd
Safe to eternal Paradiſe of reſt.
Meanwhile they in their earthly Canaan plac
Long time ſhall dwell and proſper, but when
National interrupt their public peace,
Provoking God to raiſe them enemies:
From whom as oft he ſaves them penitent
By judges firſt, then under kings; of whom
The ſecond, both for pietie renown'd
And puiſſant deeds, a promiſe ſhall receive
Irrevocable, that his regal throne
For ever ſhall endure; the like ſhall ſing
All prophecie, that of the royal ſtock
Of David (ſo I name this king) ſhall riſe
A ſon, the woman's ſeed to thee foretold,
Foretold to Abraham, as in whom ſhall trut
All nations, and to kings foretold, of king
The laſt, for of his reign ſhall be no end.

Part good, part bad, of bad the longer ſcrowle,
Whoſe foul idolatries, and other faults
Heapt to the popular ſumme, will ſo incenſe
God, as to leave them, and expoſe their land,
Their citie, his temple, and his holy ark
With all his ſacred things, a ſcorn and prey
To that proud citie, whoſe high walls thou ſawſt
Left in confuſion, Babylon thence call'd.
There in captivitie he lets them dwell
The ſpace of ſeventie years, then brings them back,
Remembring mercie, and his cov'nant ſworn
To David, ſtabliſht as the dayes of heav'n.
Return'd from Babylon by leave of kings
Their lords, whom God diſpos'd, the houſe of God
They firſt re-edifie, and for a while
In mean eſtate live moderate, till grown
In wealth and multitude, factious they grow;
But firſt among the prieſts diſſenſion ſprings,
Men who attend the altar, and ſhould moſt
Endeavour peace: their ſtrife pollution brings
Upon the temple itſelf: at laſt they ſeiſe
The ſcepter, and regard not David's ſons,
Then looſe it to a ſtranger, that the true
Anointed king Meſſiah might be born
Barr'd of his right; yet at his birth a ſtar
Unſeen before in heav'n proclaims him come,
And guides the eaſtern ſages, who enquire
His place to offer incenſe, myrrh, and gold;
His place of birth a ſolemn angel tells
To ſimple ſhepherds, keeping watch by night?
They gladly thither haſte, and by a quire

He ceas'd, [illegible]
Surcharg'd, as had, like grief, been dew'd in
Without the vent of words, which theſe he b
O prophet of glad tidings, finiſher
Of utmoſt hope! now clear I underſtand
What oft my ſteddieſt thoughts have ſearcht in
Why our great expectation ſhould be call'd
The ſeed of woman: virgin mother, haile,
High in the love of heaven, yet from my l
Thou ſhalt proceed, and from thy womb the
Of God moſt high; ſo God with man unite
Needs muſt the ſerpent now his capital bru
Expect with mortal pain: ſay where and wh
Their fight, what ſtroke ſhall bruiſe the victo
To whom thus Michael. Dream not of t
As of a duel, or the local wounds
Of head or heel: not therefore joins the for
Manhood to god-head, with more ſtrength t
Thy enemie; nor ſo is overcome
Satan, whoſe fall from heav'n, a deadlier bru
Diſabl'd not to give thee thy deaths wound

On penaltie of death, and ſuffering death,
The penaltie to thy tranſgreſſion due,
And due to theirs which out of thine will grow:
So only can high juſtice reſt appaid,
The law of God exact he ſhall fulfill
Both by obedience and by love, though love
Alone fulfill the law, thy puniſhment
He ſhall endure by coming in the fleſh
To a reproachful life and curſed death,
Proclaiming life to all who ſhall believe
In his redemption, and that his obedience
Imputed becomes theirs by faith, his merits
To ſave them, not their own, though legal works.
For this he ſhall live hated, be blaſphem'd,
Seis'd on by force, judg'd, and to death condemn'd
A ſhameful and accurſt, nail'd to the croſs
By his own nation, ſlain for bringing life;
But to the croſs he nails thy enemies,
The law that is againſt thee, and the ſins
Of all mankind, with him there crucifi'd,
Never to hurt them more who rightly truſt
In this his ſatisfaction; ſo he dies,
But ſoon revives, death over him no power
Shall long uſurp; ere the third dawning light
Return, the ſtars of morn ſhall ſee him riſe
Out of his grave, freſh as the dawning light
Thy ranſom paid, which man from death redeems,
His death for man, as many as offer'd life
Neglect not, and the benefit imbrace
By faith not void of works: this god-like act
Annuls thy doom, the death thou ſhouldſt have dy'd,

A gentle wafting to immortal life.
Nor after reſurrection ſhall he ſtay
Longer on earth then certain times to appee
To his diſciples, men who in his life
Still follow'd him; to them ſhall leave in ch
To teach all nations what of him they lea
And his ſalvation, them who ſhall believe
Baptizing in the profluent ſtreame, the fig
Of waſhing them from guilt of ſin to life
Pure, and in mind prepar'd, if ſo befall,
For death, like that which the Redeemer d
All nations they ſhall teach; for from that
Not only to the ſon's of Abraham's loines
Salvation ſhall be preacht, but to the ſons
Of Abraham's faith wherever through the
So in his ſeed all nations ſhall be bleſt.
Then to the heav'n of heav'ns he ſhall aſce
With victory, triumphing through the air
Over his foes and thine; there ſhall ſurpri
The ſerpent, prince of air, and drag in ch

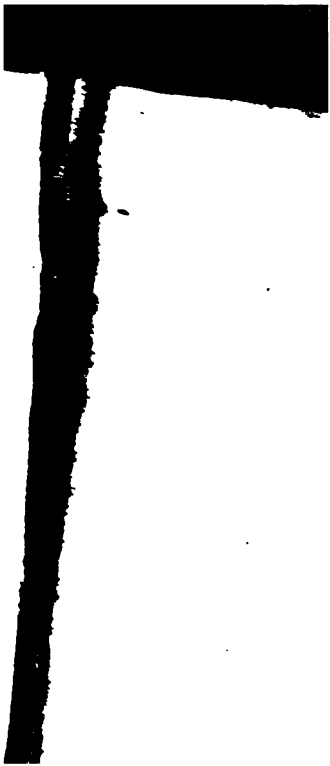
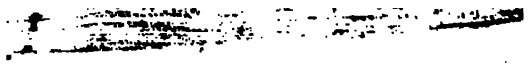
With glory and power to judge both quick and dead,
To judge th'unfaithful dead, but to reward
His faithful, and receave them into bliſs,
Whether in heav'n or earth, for then the earth
Shall all be Paradiſe, far happier place
Than this of Eden, and far happier days.
So ſpake th'archangel Michael, then paus'd,
As at the world's great period; and our ſire
Replete with joy and wonder thus repli'd.
O goodneſs infinite, goodneſs immenſe!
That all this good of evil ſhall produce,
And evil turn to good; more wonderful
Then that which by creation firſt brought forth
Light out of darkneſs! full of doubt I ſtand,
Whether I ſhould repent me now of ſin
By me done and occaſion'd, or rejoice
Much more, that much more good thereof ſhall ſpring,
To God more glory, more good-will to men
From God, and over wrauth grace ſhall abound.
But ſay, if our deliverer up to heav'n
Muſt reaſcend, what will betide the few
His faithful, left among th'unfaithful herd,
The enemies of truth; who then ſhall guide
His people, who defend? will they not deal
Worſe with his followers then with him they dealt?
Be ſure they will, ſaid th'angel; but from heav'n
He to his own a comforter will ſend,
The promiſe of the Father, who ſhall dwell
His ſpirit within them, and the law of faith
Working through love, upon their hearts ſhall write,
To guide them in all truth, and alſo arm
With ſpiritual armour, able to reſiſt

Pour'd firſt on his apoſtles, whom he ſent
To evangelize the nations, then on all
Baptiz'd, ſhall them with wondrous gifts en
To ſpeak all tongues, and do all miracles,
As did their lord before them. Thus they w
Great numbers of each nation to receive
With joy the tidings brought from heav'n
Their miniſtry perform'd, and race well ru
Their doctrine and their ſtory written left,
They die; but in their room, as they for
Wolves ſhall ſucceed for teachers, grievou
Who all the ſacred myſteries of heav'n
To their own vile advantages ſhall turn
Of lucre and ambition, and the truth
With ſuperſtitions and traditions taint,
Left only in thoſe written records pure,
Though not but by the ſpirit underſtood.
Then ſhall they ſeek to avail themſelves
Places and titles, and with theſe to join
Secular power, though feigning ſtill to

Shall on the heart ingrave. What will they then
But force the ſpirit of grace itſelf, and bind
His conſort libertie; what, but unbuild
His living temples, built by faith to ſtand,
Their own faith not another's: for on earth
Who againſt faith and conſcience can be heard
Infallible? yet many will preſume:
Whence heavie perſecution ſhall ariſe
On all who in the worſhip perſevere
Of ſpirit and truth; the reſt, far greater part,
Will deem in outward rites and ſpecious forms
Religion ſatisfi'd truth ſhall retire
Beſtuck with ſlandrous darts, and works of faith
Rarely be found: ſo ſhall the world go on,
To good malignant, to bad men benign,
Under her own weight groaning, till the day
Appeer of reſpiration to the juſt,
And vengeance to the wicked, at return
Of him ſo lately promis'd to thy aid,
The woman's ſeed, obſcurely then foretold,
Now amplier known thy ſaviour and thy lord,
Last in the clouds from heav'n to be reveal'd
In glory of the Father to diſſolve
Satan with his perverted world, then raiſe
From the conflagrant maſs, purg'd and refin'd,
New heav'ns, new earth, ages of endleſs date
Founded in righteouſneſs and peace and love,
Bringing forth fruits joy and eternal bliſs.
He ended; and thus Adam laſt repli'd.
How ſoon hath thy prediction, ſeer bleſt,
Meaſur'd this tranſient world, the race of time,
Till time ſtand fixt: beyond is all abyſs,

Henceforth a ...
And love with fear the only God, to w...
As in his preſence, ever to obſerve
His providence, and on him ſole depend,
Merciful over all his works, with good
Still overcoming evil, and by ſmall
Accompliſhing great things, by things deem'
Subverting worldly ſtrong, and worldly wiſ
By ſimply meek; that ſuffering for truth's ſ
Is fortitude to higheſt victorie,
And to the faithful death the gate of life;
Taught this by his example whom I now
Acknowledge my redeemer ever bleſt.

To whom thus alſo th'angel laſt repli'd
This having learnt, thou haſt attain'd the
Of wiſdom; hope no higher, though all
Thou knoweſt by name, and all th'ethere
All ſecrets of the deep, all nature's work
Or works of God in heav'n, air, earth, or
And all the riches of this world enjoydſt,
And all the rule, one empire; only add
... anſwerable, add

us deſcend now therefore from this top
ſpeculation; for the hour preciſe
ıfts our parting hence; and ſee the guards,
me encampt on yonder hill, expect
eir motion, at whoſe front a flaming ſword,
ſignal of remove, waves fiercely round;
: may no longer ſtay: go, waken Eve;
r alſo I with gentle dreams have calm'd;
rtending good, and all her ſpirits compos'd
meek ſubmiſſion: thou at ſeaſon fit
t her with thee partake what thou haſt heard,
ieſly what may concern her faith to know,
ıe great deliverance by her ſeed to come
or by the woman's ſeed) on all mankind.
ıat ye may live, which will be many dayes,
ıth in one faith unanimous though ſad,
ith cauſe for evils paſt, yet much more cheer'd
ith meditation on the happie end.
He ended, and they both deſcend the hill;
ſcended, Adam to the bowre where Eve
ıy ſleeping ran before, but found her wak'e;
nd thus with words not ſad ſhe him receav'd.
Whence thour return'ſt, and whither went'ſt, I know;
or God is alſo in ſleep, and dreams advife,
/hich he hath ſent propitious, ſome great good
reſaging, ſince with ſorrow and heart's diſtreſs
/earied I fell aſleep: but now lead on;
ı me is no delay; with thee to go,
; to ſtay here; without thee here to ſtay,
to go hence unwilling; thou to me
ırt all things under heav'n, all places thou,
Vho for my wilful crime are baniſht hence.

Well pleas'd, but answer'd not; for r
Th'archangel ſtood, and from the otl
To their fixt ſtation, all in bright ar
The cherubim deſcended; on the gr
Gliding meteorous, as ev'ning miſt
Ris'n from a river o're the mariſh glic
And gathers ground faſt at the labou
Homeward returning. High in front
The brandiſht ſword of God before th
Fierce as a comet; which with torri
And vapour as the Libyan air aduſt,
Began to parch that temperate clime
In either hand the haſtning angel cau
Our lingring parents, and to th'eaſte
Led them direct, and down the cliff
To the ſubjected plain; then diſapp
They looking back, all th'eaſtern fid
Of Paradiſe, ſo late their happie ſeat
Wav'd over by that flaming brand, t
With dreadful faces throng'd and fie